1-1-1999

An analysis of moral shame : implications for curriculum reform.

Jay Joseph Conway
University of Massachusetts Amherst

AN ANALYSIS OF MORAL SHAME:
IMPLICATIONS FOR CURRICULUM REFORM

A Dissertation Presented

By

JAY JOSEPH CONWAY

Submitted to the Graduate School of the
University of Massachusetts Amherst in partial fulfillment
of the requirements for the degree of

DOCTOR OF EDUCATION

September 1999

School of Education

AN ANALYSIS OF MORAL SHAME:

IMPLICATIONS FOR CURRICULUM REFORM

A Dissertation Presented

By

JAY JOSEPH CONWAY

Approved as to style and content by:

Robert L. Sinclair, Chair

Gareth B. Matthews, Member

Deirdre A. Almeida, Member

Bailey W. Jackson, Dean
School of Education

Shame is the semivirtue of the learner.

Myles Burnyeat

Shame is not a word in my vocabulary.

A School Counselor

The pleasure or pain that accompanies people's acts
should be taken as a sign of their dispositions...
Hence the importance (as Plato says) of having been trained
in some way from infancy
to feel joy and grief
at the right things:

true education is precisely this.

Aristotle

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

During the process of writing this dissertation many people were helpful. None more so than my wife, Jean. For years she shouldered the lion's share of our daily responsibilities so that I could read and write. And she did so patiently, quietly, - and as so often happens when routines develop - frequently without adequate thanks. I am profoundly grateful to her for her love, loyalty, and humor. As she gently points out - it is not easy living with someone interested only in those theories "where the rubber meets the sky".

I am thankful to my advisor, Robert Sinclair, for his instruction and guidance, his exemplary model of scholarship, and for the encouragement and latitude to pursue a somewhat unconventional educational topic. I am also grateful for the careful reading and thoughtful suggestions of my committee members, Deirdre Almeida and Gareth Matthews.

Thanks also to Fred Feldman of the Philosophy Department. As did Bob and Gary, Fred made me a more careful and critical reader. Long before the Monica Lewinsky disgrace, Fred taught me the importance of being observant to each writers usage of what 'is' is.

Sincere thanks are due my principal and supervisor, Moira O'Brien. She has been supportive of all my efforts to pursue this project although I suspect she has always been skeptical that concrete suggestions would emerge from this study that would directly benefit the elementary school children she loves so dearly.

Thanks are due to Sue Richardson for working with me on the interview transcriptions and to all the people who agreed to interviews and follow-up discussions. Many thanks are due the high school teacher who not only gave

considerable time to his interviews but also helped administer one survey. Although he deserves more, to identify him jeopardizes our confidentiality agreement. I hope he understands.

Fred Tillis deserves special mention. While I was at the University of Massachusetts and while touring Europe with his jazz quintet Fred extended innumerable kindnesses to me and to my wife. He is, by Aristotelian standards, a magnanimous man. His is a disposition worthy of emulation.

Sincere thanks and much love to my mother. Her careful proof reading and thoughtful comments improved this paper. I am eternally grateful to her for her examples of selflessness and true love and for her unshakable faith in God and in the basic goodness of man.

Mistakes and trivialities that remain are mine.

ABSTRACT

AN ANALYSIS OF MORAL SHAME:

IMPLICATIONS FOR CURRICULUM REFORM

SEPTEMBER 1999

JAY JOSEPH CONWAY, B. A., MARLBORO COLLEGE

M. ED., KEENE STATE COLLEGE

Ed. D., UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS AMHERST

Directed by: Professor Robert Sinclair

An appealing notion is that the emotions make a significant contribution to a flourishing life. The self-regarding emotions of self-respect, self-esteem, and pride are undeniably things of great value; Aristotle proposed that a justified sense of honor was the crown of the virtues. Many public schools actively incorporate self-esteem initiatives in their curricula in the belief that positive self-evaluations enhance learning and good citizenship.

One can maintain without contradiction that the self-regarding emotions with negative properties detract from a happy life. Various attempts have been made to suggest that shame, humiliation, guilt, and remorse are intrinsically bad. Many proponents from within the two leading moral education approaches - the cognitive developmentalists and the traditionalists - subscribe to this view. According to these theorists, the aforementioned emotions are viewed as counter-productive and unmotivational. I examine their positions and find them flawed.

This dissertation proposes that moral shame can be conditionally good. To justify this claim requires a plausible account of what an emotion is, the formulation of a clear and precise definition of moral shame, an explication

of how shame differs from other emotions of self-assessment, and an argument that shame has moral significance. Following that, the two leading educational theories of moral development will be examined to assess how they value and accommodate the emotions of self-assessment.

Interviews are conducted with principals, teachers, students, law enforcement and district court personnel, members of the clergy, and social workers to support the claim that a sense of shame contributes to moral progress. In that this view might be overlooked in many of the current moral education programs, I conclude the study with suggestions for the necessary curriculum reform.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF TABLES

CHAPTER 1

NATURE OF THE STUDY

Introduction

Most educators, psychologists, and philosophers agree that the primary purpose of moral education is to encourage children to develop good and strong characters (Kupperman, 1991). There is little disagreement among these professionals that the present world our school children inhabit is riddled with negative influences. By now the list of these influences is well known. Candidates that contend for a high rank in many surveys include broken families, teenage pregnancies, substance abuse, illiteracy, egocentrism, and dishonesty (Benninga, 1991; Bennett, 1993; Huffman, 1994). How one orders this list will, of course, depend in large part on what one values.

Schools feel the weight of these disorders. Devised in many instances by default, school-based programs attempt to rectify negative behaviors. Strategies include intervention services, remediation / rehabilitation, and various sorts of punishments. This study is not another attempt along those lines. In what follows, the focus will be identifying and defining a contributing cause to the escalation of these behaviors; and that is, it is proposed, shamelessness. One hypothesis of this study is that a sense of shame might prohibit some of these disorders from ever occurring. Were this true, it seems to follow that our efforts would be more productively channeled in an attempt to instill a sense of shame in young children rather than to focus on the oftentimes ineffectual and disappointing efforts at rehabilitation.

Statement of the Problem

I first became interested in the notion of shame in a graduate course on Aristotle's ethics. Suitable paper topics in philosophy often concern attempts to sort out conceptual puzzles or apparent contradictions in a philosopher's work. In this regard, Aristotle's work is rich in opportunity. The complexity of Aristotle's thought and the suggestive nature of his writing account for an enormous body of secondary literature of widely divergent interpretations. An interpretation of Aristotle's view of shame seemed a suitable paper topic because I simply could not understand how his various comments were intended to fit together without conflict.

While Aristotle's writing on shame is characteristically suggestive, there is a limited amount of critical commentary. As with many other Aristotelian topics, what interpretive literature exists does not amount to a consensus. One explanation for the differing views is that it is not immediately apparent whether Aristotle considers shame to be of moral significance. In the Nicomanchean Ethics (NE), he explicitly states:

> Shame is not the emotion of a good man, if it is felt for doing bad actions, because such actions ought not to be done...so the emotion ought not to be felt (1953, 1128b20).

A few lines later there appears to be a puzzling contradiction. "But shame may be said to be conditionally good; if a good man does such actions, he will feel disgraced" (1128b29). Regarding children, he writes:

> The passion is not becoming to every age, but only to youth. For we think young people should be prone to shame because they live by passion and therefore commit many errors, but are restrained by shame (1128b16).

It seems then that Aristotle believes that shame - for adults - can function as a corrective measure, while shame - for the young - serving the developmentally beneficial function of restraint, is "becoming". According to Myles Burnyeat, this power to restrain the young affords shame a "semi-virtue" classification (1980). This interpretation is not universally accepted. In "Shame and Moral Progress", John Kekes understands there to be a fundamental disagreement between Plato and Aristotle over the moral significance of shame. According to Kekes, Plato considers shame to be "one of the important safeguards of morality (1988, p. 282). Kekes claims Aristotle clearly disagrees with Plato. He cites this presumably straight-forward sentence from the same passage of the NE as textual support. "And if shamelessness - not to be ashamed of doing base actions - is bad, that does not make it good to be ashamed of doing such actions" (1128b33).
When Aristotle says that shame *may be said* to be a conditionally good thing, Kekes apparently understands him to be referring to a prevailing opinion with which Aristotle disagrees.

Contemporary literature on shame contains similar disagreements. Kekes, himself, considers shame to be debilitating. He encourages us to entertain other responses to moral failings since shame weakens our resolve to reform and threatens our self-respect (1988, p. 291). On the other hand, Gabriele Taylor maintains that a sense of shame fortifies one's commitment to those values and standards that justify our self-respect (1985). One account for disagreements of this sort is the view that an emotion is "passive"

or "active". Kekes considers shame to be "backward-looking". As such, shame cannot deter future wrongdoing, precisely because the wrong is in the future: there is, as yet, nothing to be ashamed about. Colleague Arnold Isenberg concurs. "Shame and regret are literally helpless, for they are concentrated upon what we can do nothing about, on the past. Hence, they are "passive", incompatible with action" (1980, p. 375). Taylor counters that a "forward-looking" component of shame is that it strengthens one's commitment to values. We maintain our self-respect by avoiding disgraceful conduct.

> Avoidance of shame is one way of losing self-respect, for it is one way of blurring the values the person is committed to. From this point of view, genuine shame is always justified (1985, p. 85).

Many psychologists render a blanket condemnation on most shame experiences; some feel it is an emotionally primitive (Erikson, 1950; Borysenko, 1990) and "toxic" experience (Bradshaw, 1988). Prior to any claims about the alleged significance of shame, what immediately strikes a reader who reviews the various positions is the profound lack of clarity on what exactly shame is. One writer will claim it is an external, social experience (Benedict, 1934), another believes it to be primarily internal. As we saw above, writers disagree over the passive/active distinction. Additional differences will be presented in what follows. But what these initial controversies alert us to is that there is great confusion at more basic levels. These are: exactly what is an emotion, and, how do individual emotions differ from one another.

Another problem centers on the implementation of moral curricula. Proponents of school prayer claim a direct connection between the Supreme Courts ruling (Engel v. Vitale, 1976) that state-sponsored public school prayer

violates the Constitution with the escalation of crime, racial conflict, drug abuse and sexual promiscuity (Eastland, 1995). Opponents of school prayer view any connection as mere coincidence. Few in either group, however, dispute the worrisome rise in crime statistics since the ruling in 1976. One indisputable fact that resulted from the ban on school prayer is that it left school leaders perplexed about how one distinguishes religious observances from moral education. In response, many simply did nothing (Lickona, 1991; Kilpatrick, 1992; Eastland, 1995).

Years ago, schools focused on socializing students and preparing them for citizenship both through the formal curriculum and through the "hidden" curriculum. The hidden curriculum refers to implicit expectations, structural arrangements and the behavior patterns of the school staff (Sinclair and Ghory, 1987). Unwritten standards of behavior applied to all members of the school community. The formal curriculum contained clearly articulated mission statements, the school's philosophy, and lesson material which included indoctrinative readings in moral education. Reading lessons, gleaned from the *McGuffey Reader* - the largest circulated book in the early 1900's - contained lessons promoting the moral virtues of honesty, charity, courage and respectfulness (Lickona, 1991).

In light of recent trends, many schools felt compelled to actively reincorporate moral education into their formal curriculum. Recent efforts have included Values Clarification, Sex Education, Conflict Resolution, Peer Mediation, Drug Awareness Resistance Education (DARE), The "Just Community" School Model, Character Education programs and "self-esteem" initiatives. Many of these efforts have met with justifiable opposition. Among the charges leveled by parents and community members have been the use of

inappropriate materials, subversive ideologies, time management problems, social engineering and usurping parental authority.

Some of these programs are clearly better than others. Negotiating a compromise over a playground dispute with a peer mediator, being forewarned about the hazards of narcotics, and learning about sexual biology ought not qualify as comprehensive moral education curricula. Of the remaining, all follow one of two general approaches: character development or cognitive-developmental. These two approaches differ both conceptually and practically. Theoretically, character education holds that virtue can be taught, that good models are essential for moral development and that the young are not appropriate candidates for Socratic dialogues. Practically, teachers must "impose" specific values to ensure the development of proper habits. Virtually every leading theorist in character education takes his or her lead from Aristotle by stressing the importance of developing settled dispositions or good habits. This school of thought believes dispositions are to begin development prior to, not necessarily concurrent with, intellectual rationalizations. This indoctrinative approach is dismissed as misguided by the cognitive-developmentalists. Often characterized as the indirect approach, the various cognitive-development models share a common distrust for the development of habits through "indoctrination" or imposing upon the young a "bag of virtues".

Cognitive-developmentalists often contend that 'habituation' is the transmission of values that are not applicable in modern times while others object that indoctrination usurps autonomous self-direction. Socratic dialogues, therefore, are enthusiastically endorsed. These dialogues often center on resolving ethical dilemmas. Characterized by a certain "intellectualism", - by virtue of its democratic, open-ended dialogue structure -

teachers are instructed to accept each student's decision nonjudgmentally. Even virtuous traits such as honesty, responsibility, and fairness become suspect by virtue of their conservatism; empathy and skepticism are higher goals than is conformity for advocates of "constructivism".

> Children must be invited to reflect on complex issues, to recast them in light of their own experiences and question, to figure out for themselves...which traditions are worth keeping, and how to proceed when two basic values conflict (Kohn, 1997, p. 435).

"Character educators", suspicious that children have neither the experience nor the intellectual machinery to evaluate value conflicts, oppose questioning tradition.

Programs from both approaches have been the subject of criticism from education boards, international academic journals, and local school committees (Kirkpatrick, 1992; Kohn, 1997; Lockwood 1976; Sommers, 1984). Coupled with the litigious nature of modern times, many schools responded to the critical press and community objections with a second period of inactivity. With little confidence in the effectiveness of available programs and perceiving an adversarial relationship with a segment of the parent population, school administrators offered only the most innocuous of instructional offerings and adopted a zero tolerance stance for school infractions. Unfortunately, this reactive posture does little for character development while resulting in many frivolous suspensions.

The majority of thoughtful observers from either approach agree that troubling behaviors and the severity of the transgressions are escalating among America's youth. These admissions, however, do not translate into an agreement on *how* schools can best assist parents and communities to address these problems. The sheer number and variety of models attests to

substantive philosophical disagreements over the means to the same goal - namely, helping children to develop good and strong characters.

A problem is this: many disputes arise over the means toward a goal that is itself unclear. Over the last few decades several forces have undermined the view that 'good character' is a concept that is amenable to objective and precise formulation. A short list of these forces might include the popularity of ethical relativism and nonjudgmental self-help psychologies; the difficulty to understand and to implement a character program; and, school personnel who have historically claimed to have neither the time, the desire, a consensus, nor an abundance of literature to guide an action plan to help children develop good character.

Those contemporary educational methods that reintroduce the affective dimension - feelings and emotions - (e.g., Values Clarification, Peer Mediation, Conflict Resolution, etc.) tend to replace the objective aspiration toward good character with subjective assessments of self-esteem.

Evidence in this study will be introduced which suggests that high self-esteem can co-exist with both ethical illiteracy and offensive behavior. Self-esteem, the common goal for many school programs, may have no necessary connection with good character. Proponents of "self-esteem" initiatives routinely dismiss shame - an index of one's serious commitment to values and to the standards of the community, as passe'. Some believe shame contributes to low self-esteem and is, therefore, a danger to one's general well-being (Isenberg, 1988; Kekes, 1993). As such, it is considered intrinsically evil. This view creates another problem.

Accompanying the worrisome rise in crime statistics is an equally troubling parallel development: more and more offenders appear to display shamelessness for their crimes (Alter and Wingert, 1995). To lack shame for

serious transgressions may signal a disposition that is resistant to change. As bad behavior and high self-esteem are not mutually exclusive, this suggests the question whether one can have genuine pride and self-respect without a sense of shame.

Another problem, suggested in the introduction, is that by under-estimating the positive aspect of shame, we might miss an important opportunity. It seems intuitively correct that many of our reactive efforts (rehabilitation, cognitive-therapies, elaborate external methods of deterrence, etc.) would never be needed if a sense of shame prohibited certain behaviors from ever occurring.

Simply put, the most significant problem appears to be that of having things the wrong way around. Self-esteem is considered to be achievable independently from that which ought to justify its existence - that being good character. High self-esteem is attractive in the ease with which it is promoted and in its supposedly painless acquisition. But, without an understanding of the proper development of good character and an appreciation for the early work it requires, however difficult and sometimes painful, subsequent reactive measures are required due to its absence.

Statement of Purpose

One purpose of the study will be to propose a clear and useful analysis of the concept of moral shame. It is hoped that from such a study a significant contribution will be made to future attempts in public school moral education initiatives for promoting the acquisition of virtuous dispositions, genuine self-respect, and reflective temperaments in children. All these appear to be

threatened by popular psychology's privatization and trivialization of "self-esteem".

Every educational method cited above is, in some degree, guilty either of an incoherent psychological view of self-esteem as a self-referential emotion that can be "caused" by others or of neglecting or underestimating the reformative potential of shame. In the introduction to Self-Esteem, author Matthew McKay promises the therapist: "You can increase a client's self-esteem more rapidly...using the cognitive restructuring techniques presented here (McKay and Fanning, 1987, p. 5). Many methods over-estimate the value of self-esteem with weak philosophical arguments. The issue of genuine self-respect is further complicated by ethical theorists who consider it to be synonymous with self-esteem (Rawls, 1971), locate it as a subset of self-esteem (Branden, 1993), or believe self-respect and self-esteem precede good character (Rogers, 1965).

If it is true that genuine self-respect results from, and does not precede, good character, this, then, seems to merit a reinvestigation into the nature of the emotions of shame and self-esteem. A review of the literature and interviews with children and adults might suggest that shame plays a conditionally good role in the formation of a virtuous character. This may support the view that those strategies intended to elevate self-esteem while disparaging a sense of shame may be non-starters. Evidence for this contention constitutes the second aim of this study, while suggestions for the required refinements to our schools moral education programs is the third aim.

Three major research questions will guide this study. These are:

1) What is the emotion of moral shame?

2) What impact might moral shame have on character development?

3) What implications for the reform of school curriculum are suggested by the findings of this study?

Definition of Terms

Several key terms are central to this study. As one objective of the study is to clearly define these concepts, the following proposed definitions or descriptions should be considered tentative.

Character: a person's normal pattern of thought and action, especially with respect to concerns and commitments in matters affecting the happiness of others and of himself, and most especially in relation to moral choices (Kupperman, 1995).

Embarrassment: the awareness of the involvement in something unfortunate and awkward and the judgment that one is incapable of responding appropriately (Solomon, 1992).

Emotion: a dynamically related complex of cognition, affect and desire (Oakley, 1992).

Regret: a sad feeling toward a state of affairs that had negative consequences (e.g. S, a teacher, lost her job).

Agent-regret: a sad feeling toward a state of affairs that had negative consequences in which one was a participant (e.g. S, a teacher in my department, lost her job) (Barron, 1988).

Remorse: a sad feeling toward a state of affairs that had negative consequences that one was a participant in and which one could have and should have averted (e.g., S, a teacher in my department, lost her job because I lied on her evaluation) (Barron, 1988).

Repentance: "the remorseful acceptance of responsibility for one's wrongful and harmful actions, the repudiation of the aspects of one's character that generated the actions, the resolve to do one's best to expiate those aspects of one's character, and the resolve to atone or make amends for the harm that one has done" (Murphy, 1995).

Self-esteem: The emotional response of a person to the self-evaluation of the ratio of personal aspirations to personal successes (William James, 1890) or "the disposition to experience oneself as competent to cope with the basic challenges of life and as worthy of happiness" (Branden, 1994).

Self-Respect: "a complex and multifaceted phenomenon involving...aspects of cognition, valuation, orientation, affect, expectation, motivation, action, and reaction that bear on one's worth as a person - that is, on one's dignity as a person as such, the value and significance of one's life (and) the quality of one's character and manner of living" (Dillon, 1995).

Moral Development: The view, according to cognitive developmentalists, that individuals necessarily move through stages of concept displacement of increasingly adequate or sophisticated rationalizations (e. g., Kohlberg's Preconventional, Conventional and Autonomous levels). This view concentrates almost entirely on the adjudication of conflicting moral claims.

By contrast, character educators stress the importance of acquiring proper habits and emotional states as necessary components of development. In this view character development is considered to be the process of forming virtuous habits by exposure to role models, the practice of right behavior and the acquisition and development of proper emotional reactions and feelings.

A third view - a synthesis of the above positions - proposes five distinct dimensions of development: paradigms, defining characteristics, the range of cases, adjudicating conflicting moral claims and moral imagination (see Matthews' The Philosophy of Childhood, pp. 54 -67).

Moral Shame: a painful, self-directed feeling and cognitive realization that one has fallen short of what one considers to be a worthy and valid standard to which one does or should aspire; a self-accusatory social emotion elicited by wrongful action.

Guilt: self-reproach; a painful, self-directed feeling and cognitive realization that one has transgressed a boundary or limit set by an authority figure; an awareness of harm brought upon others by one's action or inaction.

Humiliation: a deflation, often with comic overtones, of one's pretentiousness.

Significance of Study

Herbert Morris, editor of *Guilt and Shame,* charges that analytic philosophers have given "offhand attention" to the concept of guilt. With shame, these same philosophers displayed "almost a total lack of philosophic interest" (Morris, 1971, p. 2). They are not alone. Philosopher Robin Dillon claims psychologists talk almost exclusively about self-esteem (Dillion, ed., 1994), while psychiatrist Daniel Nathanson laments the fact that nothing in his training or that of his colleagues, "had anything to do with shame" (Karen, 1992, p. 46) One contribution of this study will be the attempt at a greater definitional precision of these concepts. It is hoped that with this clarity comes an understanding of the proper place in moral education of shame and other emotions of self-assessment.

It has been proposed that children with high self-esteem are better able to withstand negative pressures (Kirkpatrick, 1992) . Psychologist Nathaniel Branden considers self-esteem "the single most important psychological subject in the world" and defines self-esteem as: "the disposition to experience oneself as competent to cope with the basic challenges of life and as worthy of happiness" (1995, p. 27). This definition (and similar variants) is found in many school manuals on self-esteem. It has difficulties. It offers no explanation of what constitutes happiness. A "disposition" of competence and the range of challenges one entertains can be highly subjective. As noted above, many popular "therapies" are considered successful if, as Carl Rogers proclaims, the proportion of positively framed self-references increase (1965). In these approaches it is not clear that merit be reassessed or that changes in conduct or conscientious effort require modification. If happiness is achievable

merely by increasing the ratio of positive self-references, children or therapy clients need only adjust their field of challenges. Not only is this condescending to children, it also sets the stage for what some school counselors fear the most - facing humiliation.

> This style of cultivating self-esteem patronizes children, yielding cynicism in the smart ones and deceiving the others, ultimately producing an ignorance not as easily corrigible as more innocent ignorances. Because this ignorance is eventually maintained by self-deception it often produces an effrontery that insists (often rather aggressively) on the excellence of its own mediocrity (Miller, 1993, p. 135).

For many children it seems to be only a matter of time for the unfortunate but inevitable deflation of this pretentiousness. External forces are not the only threat. E. D. Hirsh, Jr. foresees internal emotional dangers. Lavish, unmerited praise to bolster self-esteem, in his view, "breeds complacency, or skepticism, or both, and, ultimately, a decline in self esteem" ("Education Review", 27 Oct. 96). These authors agree that many educational programs have a confused notion of the goal. High self-esteem may not promote good character; high self-esteem ought to be in recognition of an existing and stable good character.

If we view virtue as an excellence of character, then it follows - as with any developed excellence - it is preceded by hard work, it presupposes skilled teachers, it requires practical wisdom and emotional control. It, by necessity, must also honestly acknowledge occasional failures. How one views failure gives us insight into that person's motivation, standards and goals.

To define and to clarify what an emotion is, and to explicate the conceptual links between the emotions of shame and guilt and self-respect and self-esteem will be of benefit in assessing moral education programs. This aim will allow the study to proceed to formulate and defend suggestions of

curriculum reform for moral education programs whereby these emotional states have a newfound clarity and utility.

Lastly, it is hoped that what will follow from a clarity of these concepts is support for the argument that the reorientation of the goal to be that of good character. And as the concept of the goal changes, so must the strategies to achieve that goal undergo refinement.

Delimitations of the Study

This is a conceptual study with practical applications. It concentrates on formulating and defending an analytic definition of moral shame. It will attempt to explain the conditionally good influence this emotion may have on character development. Shame, however, is an emotion of perplexing variability in both degree and form (Taylor, 1985; Kekes, 1988; Karen, 1992; Dillon, 1995). Among the many forms it may take are: a "universal shame", a globalized feeling of worthlessness; an "existential" shame, a feeling of alienation or meaninglessness; a "class" shame, a crippling self-hatred; a "narcisstic" shame, a globally negative self-portrait and a "situational" shame, a passing shame experience that may arise from a personal rejection or humiliation. In short, one can feel shame about virtually anything (Karen, 1992). As rich as these topics may be, it is not the aim of this study to examine personal reactions to one's gender, sexual orientation, social or economic position, or intellectual and physical endowments. The study will not attempt to describe, or prescribe for, shame-prone individuals or dysfunctional family systems. These issues are the domain of psychiatry and counseling psychology.

Since one aim of the paper is to support the view that a particular form of shame can be a morally significant emotion, it will be necessary to argue for a logical and necessary connection with a specific view of virtue and with the notion of living a good life. For moral shame to be rational the transgression, the standard, and proper aspirations must be afforded a reasoned argument. The position in this paper on the end that constitutes a good life and the necessity of moral virtue in the pursuit of that end, in large part, will be Aristotelian. The literature on Aristotle's ethics is enormous, so clearly it will not be possible to address every puzzle in or argument with Aristotle's ethics and neither will it be possible to examine all of the work that concerns this and related topics of interest.

One aspect of Aristotle's ethics that recommends it is that it does not look for precise, finely grained prescriptions for specific circumstances. This is to say that there is room for individual and cultural elasticity. Therefore, the view of moral shame and other related emotions in this paper will attempt to have a nature of universal applicability in their relation to living a flourishing life. It will, then, enjoy a certain cultural neutrality. Obviously different cultures express different views concerning one and the same concrete act. This problem has been and can be expressed in numerous arguments and scenarios. This paper will offer one explanation how we might sort out this puzzle without reverting to ethical or cultural relativism.

A further limitation concerns the infinitely complex nature of human agency. Moral shame ushers in the related topics of responsibility, choice, involuntary actions, a good will, theories of punishment and motivation. These topics are worthy of dissertations in their own right, as are the ethical theories that differ from Aristotle's. Although the tension these opposing theories introduce - and how they accommodate the above topics - will, hopefully, be

substantive, it is conceded at the outset that the treatment here can in no way will be exhaustive.

Review of the Literature

The literature review will consist of four major parts. In order to have a credible account of the moral significance of the specific emotion of shame, it is necessary to have an account of what an emotion is. This will be the focus of the first part. I will support the view that an emotion is comprised of cognition, affect, and desire. These three elements offer a variety of combinations; different writers propose different combinations. For example, William James, Carl Lange and David Hume propose that an emotion is a bodily or 'psychic' feeling *following* a mental impression. According to these writers, an emotion is merely affect. Cognitive theorists, on the other hand, such as Robert Solomon claim the affective dimension is quite superfluous. Solomon proposes that emotions are 'judgments'.

> I cannot be angry if I do not believe that someone has wronged or offended me. Accordingly, we might say that anger involves a moral judgment...an appeal to moral standards and not merely personal evaluations. My anger is that set of judgments (Cited in Oakley, 1992, p. 24).

Arguments in support of the view of an emotion as comprised of the three elements conclude the first part of the literature review. Some of the supporters of this view include Aristotle, Justin Oakley, Michael Stocker, and, possibly, Descartes.

The second section of the literature review will canvas the most plausible accounts on specific emotions. Many authors define shame by appeal to guilt, while another's definition of shame (Heller) is a third writer's

definition of guilt (Miller). With the components of an emotion in place, a tentative definition of shame can be proposed. This will allow us to contrast moral shame with other emotions of self-assessment and, it is hoped, begin a defense against those theories that render a blanket condemnation on the emotion. One reason for this mistaken move is that a definitional precision for moral shame is extremely difficult.

> It shades into embarrassment, humiliation, chagrin, guilt, dishonor, remorse,prudishness,disgrace,etc...Another sign of the imprecision and complexity of shame is that it has many antonyms referring to feelings incompatible with it: pride, honor, self-respect, propriety, modesty, and self-esteem are some (Kekes, 1990, p. 270).

Once we have established the necessary properties of a specific emotion, disagreement may still arise as to the moral significance of that emotion. The third part, therefore, centers on examining attitudes toward the value in moral psychology and character development of moral shame. Clearly, opinions are mixed. Positions might be said to fall into one of three categories: the negative, the neutral and the positive. Particular attention will be given to Aristotle's suggestive remarks on shame. One can find commentaries on shame that refer to Aristotle's view in support of each of the three interpretations.

Many developmental-psychologists suggest that shame has no redeeming value: it is a negative and incapacitating emotion that undermines one's self-esteem (Dyer, 1977; Borysenko, 1990).

The position of neutrality finds one expression in philosopher J. O. Urmson's article "Aristotle's Doctrine of the Mean". There he maintains that shame is a "mere passive reaction involving no desire"; it is a physical and inconsequential reaction not a cognitive and meaningful act.

Finally, there are those that believe shame has positive attributes (Rawls, 1971; Burnyeat, 1980; Nussbaum, 1980; Damon, 1988; Anderson, 1992; Karen, 1992; Bennett, 1992, 1993; Taylor, 1995; Tefler,1995). Many of these authors cite Aristotle in support of their position and claim that an honest self-assessment is an essential step toward moral reform.

The fourth part of the literature review (Chapter 4) will examine position papers of the two most influential approaches to moral education programs that are implemented in the schools. These are: the cognitive-developmental (or indirect) approach, and the traditional (or direct) approach. Advocates of the indirect approach (Piaget, Kohlberg, Simon, Raths) prescribe a democratic orientation to moral education. Students are encouraged to engage in open-ended discussions and to question the validity of authoritarian prescriptions and rigid rules. A common practice in the various indirect models is to discuss possible resolutions to ethical dilemmas. In the direct approach, by contrast, values and virtues are not debated; teachers 'transmit' certain views that students are encouraged to emulate thereby making the virtues eventually their own. Offering a persuasive verbal resolution to a thorny ethical dilemma, they often point out, has little bearing on developing the virtues.

This fourth section will conclude with a examination of how both approaches incorporate or neglect the self-regarding emotions.

Research Design

The design of this study is organized around each of the research questions. Each research question is stated and subquestions are listed. Specific steps that will be taken to answer all questions are explained.

To formulate, present and defend a definition of moral shame, two steps will be taken. First, there will be a review of philosophical and psychological texts, articles, and papers. Second, interviews will be conducted with school children, police and detention officers, District Court judges, counselors and teachers. Questionnaires and an interview consent form are attached in the Appendices .

* Research Question #1: What is the emotion of moral shame?

For an analysis to be successful the components of a topic must be properly understood and logically assembled. Philosopher Fred Feldman illustrates this idea by calling our attention to the mechanical diagrams of engines that picture "exploded views" of the parts (1992, pg. 12). Following this procedural scheme, the study will precede with a literature review of the properties of an emotion. Next will be a review of the self-regarding emotions. This section will conclude with how moral shame might be distinguished from these other emotions.

This section of the literature review can be outlined as follows:

A. What is an emotion?

1. Emotion as affect
2. Emotion as cognition
3. Emotion as desire
4. Emotion as a complex of affect, cognition, and desire

B. What is the emotion of moral shame?

1. How is shame related to and distinguishable from:

a. Regret

b. Agent-regret

c. Remorse

d. Repentance

e. Guilt

f. Embarrassment

g. Humiliation

h. Self-esteem

i. Pride

j. Self-Respect

* Research Question #2. What impact might moral shame have on character development?

The approach to the second research question will have two parts. These are: 1) a summary of the views in the literature on the moral significance of shame and its impact on character; and, 2) surveys and interviews.

Interviews will be conducted with a number of participants from different vocations and with school children from a variety of grade levels. It is hoped that it can be determined to what extent shame contributed to resolving a particular difficulty. These interviews will be open-ended to accommodate individual circumstance.

Interviews will also be conducted with various correction officers and people incarcerated in local facilities. District court judges, police chiefs and jail guards will be questioned.

The focus of the interviews with the judges will be to determine if sentencing an offender is affected by a display of repentance or shame. A few judges adapt sentences to shame offenders or take measures to assess the emotional state of the individuals before them in court. The effectiveness of these approaches will be studied.

A priest and a rabbi will be interviewed to discuss the religious community's position on absolution. Moral shame appears to be an essential ingredient in character reformation and a necessary emotion that must be expressed in order to receive absolution for sins. The Council of Trent (1551) seems to refer to shame as an "affliction of spirit", a reforming pain and sadness that is a component of repentance. It is hypothesized that Church teachings may offer insights into the dynamic nature of the emotion of moral shame.

Interviews will be requested of inmates presently incarcerated in Greenfield's Elm Street facility. The purpose of these interviews will be: 1) to determine if punishment promotes repentance, or has the reverse effect of anger and resentment; 2) to determine the emotional reaction of the inmates to their transgression; and, 3) to try to correlate emotional disposition with reformation of character.

Counselors in correctional facilities, public schools, and private practice will be interviewed. If, as hypothesized, many counselors have a negative view of shame, then the cognitive restructuring techniques employed might result in an increase in positive self-reports among their clients. But, the change in internal restraints may be, in turn, minimal or nonexistent. It would seem that unless the "remedy" treats the "cause", any positive change seen in therapy might be short-lived.

Lastly, veteran school teachers will be interviewed. This series of interviews will center around issues of changes in: approaches to discipline, operating philosophies, mission statements, parental modeling and involvement, and the attitudes and values of students over the course of their tenure.

Permission to tape-record and transcribe all of the interviews is requested.

* Research Question #3. What implications for the reform of school curriculum are suggested by the findings of this study?

The approach to the third research question will have four parts. The first part will review the literature on the two most influential approaches to moral education that are utilized in the schools: the cognitive-developmental model and the character education model. This section will also review several programs that are derivatives of one of these two approaches (e.g., Values Clarification, Peer Mediation, Conflict Resolution, "self-esteem" initiatives, etc.).

The second part will outline how the self-regarding emotions are either accommodated or neglected by these moral education programs.

The third part of this research question will be an interview survey of several area elementary and secondary school principals, counselors, and school committee members. The purpose of the interviews and the examination of each school's operating philosophy and mission statement will be to assess each schools approach to moral education.

The fourth part of this research question will consider data from the above to offer suggestions for the necessary curriculum reform.

Outline of Subsequent Chapters

Chapter Two: This chapter will discuss the methodology involved in the design of the study. It will discuss the data collection and analysis.

Chapter Three: This chapter will review the literature on emotion, moral shame, related emotions of self-assessment, and the moral significance of shame. This chapter will formulate, present, and defend a definition of moral shame.

Chapter Four: This chapter will review the literature on the two main approaches to moral education in public schools. These are: the cognitive-developmental (or the indirect) approach and the traditional (or the direct) approach. How these moral education theories and programs value and accommodate the emotions of self-assessment will be examined. A proposal on how moral shame contributes to character development will be advanced.

Chapter Five: This chapter will introduce the participants in this study, will contain relevant excerpts that relate to each of the interview questions, and will advance an answer to the third research question.

Chapter Six: This chapter will summarize the study and propose recommendations for curriculum reform and advance ideas for further research.

CHAPTER 2

RESEARCH DESIGN AND PROCEDURES

Introduction

This chapter outlines the activities of the study and the methodologies used to study the problem. Participants in the study are presented, the instruments used to collect data are described, and the techniques for data collection and analysis are explained.

Description of the Study

This is a study of the self-regarding emotion of moral shame. The purpose of the study is to propose and defend a precise definition of moral shame and to investigate how shame might affect one's character development. Findings from these investigations are examined to determine if they suggest recommendations for curriculum reform in American public schools.

Research Methodology

This is a conceptual inquiry which focuses on philosophical, psychological, and educational literature as well as material provided by interviews and surveys.

Given the purpose and the questions of this study an extensive review of the pertinent literature was required. In addition, both qualitative and quantitative methods were employed. A qualitative method refers to a research procedure "which produces descriptive data: people's own written or spoken words and observable behavior" (Bogdon and Taylor, 1975, p. 4). This study employs the in-depth interview as a qualitative instrument. In Interviewing as Qualitative Research, I. E. Seidman describes the purpose of interviewing as:

> not to get answers to questions, nor to test hypotheses, and not to "evaluate" as the term is normally used. At root of in-depth interviewing is an interest in understanding the experience of other people and the meaning they make of that experience (1991, p. 3).

The method of an open-ended, in-depth interview seemed suited to achieve the aim of allowing participants to reflect, from their particular vantage points, upon the emotions, generally, and moral shame, specifically, as elements of positive or negative influence in a child's development. An interview guide (Appendix B) offered a semi-structure to each interview. Personal circumstance, vocations, and experiences accounted for the unique direction of each interview. Various clarifying or new questions arose accordingly.

Quantitative measurement relies on instruments that "provide a standardized framework in order to limit data collection to certain predetermined responses or analysis categories" (Patton, 1980, p. 22). In this study, the quantitative measurements involved a survey form to ascertain elementary and high school age student's level of respect for fifteen professions (Appendix E). From this survey five professions that might be classified as authority figures (priest, mother, school teacher, police officer,

and judge) are separated in order to examine if these professions appear to gain or loss a child's respect as these children mature. As is proposed in an earlier chapter, recognition respect and moral shame are assumed to have a necessary connection.

A second survey inquired about elementary school children's perception of the purpose, the effectiveness, and the emotional impact of in-school detentions (Appendix C). Detentions were specifically selected as a focus to engage students in reflecting upon their emotional reaction to a presumed or real violation of school rules and to initiate dialogue regarding a child's response to an act of behavior which violates institutional policy and/or an individual value.

Participants in the Study

The subjects sampled for the research study were selected by virtue of their involvement with some aspect of child development, welfare, or education or who are public school children themselves. All adult participants were initially contacted by phone or a personal visit to be informed of the research topic. Of those who agreed to an interview, a letter of consent and a personalized interview guide were then mailed or delivered [See Appendices (A) and (B) for the text of these forms]. Permission to tape-record the interview was requested at this time and each participant was informed that the letter of consent must be read and signed prior to beginning the interview.

Those individuals who agreed to interviews were: two District Court judges, eight elementary school teachers, two elementary school principals, two guidance counselors, one high-school English teacher, one elementary health teacher, a state trooper, a retired Catholic priest, a rabbi, a Director of

Social Services, a juvenile probation officer, a fifteen year-old female high-school potential drop-out, a fifteen year-old high school honor student and distinguished athlete, and a sixteen year-old ten-grade high school repeat criminal offender. All but three elementary school teachers allowed the researcher to tape-record the interviews.

Repeated attempts to receive permission to interview people incarcerated in Franklin County went unanswered.

Five hundred and seventy six elementary school children (Grades K - 6) completed the detention survey. Four hundred and nine elementary students (Grades 3 - 6) completed the level of respect for professions survey. Forty-two elementary school teachers and aides completed this same survey.

Permission to administer this survey at the Mahar Regional High School in Orange, Massachusetts was denied the researcher by principal Frank Zak. Citing school committee members fear of "social engineering", as of September 1998, apparently all requests for surveys at Mahar are denied.

The researcher then contacted principal Paul Danielovich of the Greenfield High School and was kindly granted permission to conduct the survey. Sixty-four ninth graders and seventy-four twelfth graders completed the survey. This brought the total number of participants in the level of respect survey to six hundred and fifty seven.

Data Collection and Analysis

Three main research objectives guided the design for data collection and analysis. An explanation of the procedure in achieving each research objective is outlined below.

The data needed to answer Research Objective #1 - "What is the emotion of moral shame?" were obtained almost exclusively from the research literature. The data collected for this portion of the objectives were important for three reasons. First, a review of the philosophical, psychological, and educational literature explicitly shows that there is no consensus on what an emotion is. Disagreements obviously translate into varying opinions on specific self-regarding emotions as well as the possible moral significance of these emotions. Second, a review of the literature has determined that there is widespread disagreement on how particular emotions can be distinguished from one another. Precise definitions are often obscured by a author attributing properties to a particular emotion that does not withstand logical scrutiny. Third, confusion surrounding what an emotion is or the proper attributes of a specific emotion oftentimes leads to a faulty conclusion as to whether that emotion has a conditionally good status. One hypotheses of this research study is that moral shame is particularly plagued by all these logical errors.

The data needed to answer Research Objective #2 - "What impact might moral shame have on character development?" - were obtained from research literature, surveys, and in-depth interviews. The data collected for this portion of the objective are important for two reasons. First, the two theories of character development that are widely utilized in public schools has been discussed and subjected to critical analysis in Chapter 3. There support for the argument that the emotion of moral shame is profoundly neglected in all the various character development initiatives is advanced. This neglect, in some cases, is enough to charge that a particular theory is defective. Second, an obvious implication for curriculum reform arises with a proposal to remedy

this omission. If moral shame is viewed as a self-protective emotion with a conditionally good status and character education is a legitimate educational priority, then curriculum designs that neglect these notion will require revision.

The data needed to answer Research Objective #3 - "What implications for the reform of school curriculum are suggested by the findings of this study?" - are obtained from interviews, surveys, and from conclusions drawn from the first two objectives. The importance of this portion of the objective is the recommendations that will be proposed might help public school operate more effectively and, in some small measure, help children to develop into happier, healthier adults.

Chapter Summary

Data needed to achieve the three objectives were obtained from surveys of school children, from interviews with a variety of people in education, various human service professions, and in law enforcement as well as from an extensive review of the literature.

CHAPTER 3

REVIEW OF THE SELF-REGARDING EMOTIONS

Introduction

One difficulty in an analysis of moral shame is what many authors refer to as shame's confounding variability (Karen, 1992; Dillion, 1995; Goleman, 1995). It is not always evident what type of shame some writers have in mind. Shame can take many forms and a person can feel ashamed about virtually anything (Karen, 1990). In Point Counter Point, Aldous Huxley observed that in certain situations people can be "agonizingly ashamed of wearing brown boots with a black coat, or speaking with the wrong accent (Cited in Bonhoffer, 1945, fn. p. 21). But clearly there is an important difference between being ashamed of crooked teeth and being ashamed of a crooked scheme that has bankrupted elderly citizens.

John Rawls, in his A Theory of Justice, has a helpful and general distinction: certain features of an experience occasion a natural shame as opposed to a moral shame. Rawls claims an agent ought not to be morally blameworthy for a physical disability or a speech impediment (1971). Prior to sorting out the widely divergent views on the unique characteristics of moral shame, or the attempt to establish its moral significance, we need an account of what an emotion is. A review of the literature will show that many writers propose several different interpretations of what constitutes an emotion. Possible candidates include: 1). an affect; 2). a cognition; 3). a desire; 4). an

affect and cognition; 5). cognition and desire; or, 6). affect, cognition and desire.

In the first section I will review the literature on the possible candidates. I will argue for the account of emotion as containing cognition, affect and desire. I propose that those authors who maintain that an emotion is a dynamic relationship of all three elements have things essentially right. Arguments will be offered to support the contention that a theory is flawed by virtue of neglecting one or more of these elements.

Next, having proposed one view for the necessary and sufficient properties of an emotion, I will review the literature that attempts to distinguish moral shame from other emotions of self-assessment. These will include regret, agent-regret, remorse, repentance, humiliation, embarrassment, guilt, self-esteem, pride, and self-respect . The literature contains substantial disagreements as to the nature of these emotions. Representative arguments for the most plausible views will be considered. Definitions that accord with the complex view of an emotion will be formulated. This will set the stage to answer the first research question: What is the emotion of moral shame?

Finally, in the last section, I will review some of the most significant and plausible definitions of shame and theories that attribute either positive or negative value to the emotion. Having the correct view on the proper constituents and their interplay in an emotion does not secure a guarantee that one recognizes the moral significance of that emotion. The review of the literature has discovered that a group of authors agree upon the view of emotions as a complex phenomena, but they disagree as to the moral significance of certain emotions. This is particularly true of moral shame. For example, although Kekes (1988, 1993, 1995), Isenberg (1980), and Urmson

(1980) recognize elements of cognition and affectivity in moral shame, it remains for them a "passive" emotion. As such, they consider moral shame to be unproductive and unmotivational. In this section I will argue this approach is mistaken. My argument will propose that a theory is rendered incoherent with the suggestion that self-regarding emotions are "passive".

This claim is independent of an explication of the necessary constituents of an emotion. Let us proceed with a review of the proposed definitions of an emotion.

Components of an Emotion

In Book II of the Rhetoric, Aristotle begins his discussion of the emotions with a procedural arrangement. In order that we know how to elicit an emotion from someone - so as to be an effective, persuasive speaker - we must know three general requirements of an emotional state. Using anger as an example, Aristotle labels these categories as: knowing the state of mind of an angry person; knowing who or what will anger the agent; and, knowing the grounds for the agent's anger (1378a24-26). By virtue of these categories, some writers attribute cognition and affect to Aristotle's view of emotion.[1]

As Aristotle continues with a formal definition of anger, a more complex view of an emotion emerges. His definition reads:

> Anger may be defined as an impulse, accompanied by pain, to a conspicuous revenge for a conspicuous slight directed without justification towards what concerns oneself or towards what concerns one's friends (1378a31-33, p. 1380).

[1] See, for example, Solomon (1980). Emotions and Choice. Appendix, pg. 271.

Aristotle qualifies the 'slight' as unjustified and from a specific, identifiable source. Emotions, therefore, have an object. We can say both, " The agent is angry because..." and, "The agent is angry at...". The 'because' logically implies that the emotion of anger contains the belief or judgment that the agent has been wronged. The 'at' logically implies that the emotion has an object; a specific individual has wronged the agent. Unlike hatred, which may be directed at groups of people, anger, Aristotle tells us, is "always concerned with individuals - a Callias or a Socrates" (1382a5). Furthermore, this definition entitles us to include desire in the necessary components of emotion. The contemplation of revenge is characterized as pleasurable (1378b3) and logically requires emotions to entail goal directed behavior. An agent who does not contemplate how to avenge the individual who has slighted him can not be considered angry; had the slight been justified, the agent might be regretful or repentant (Fortenbaugh, 1969).

In Aristotle's view, then, the emotion of anger entails: cognition, the identification of a specific and unjustified harm; desire, the intention to retaliate and the wish for the pleasure that accompanies retaliation; and affect, the pain at having been unjustly slighted.

Conditions are proposed in NE for how emotions or "passions" contribute to virtue. Moral virtue, Aristotle tells us at 1106b16, is "concerned with passions and actions". For an act to be virtuous, activity and emotions must contribute to it "at the right times, with reference to the right objects, toward the right people, with the right motive, and in the right way" (1106b20-21). These conditions on Aristotle's characterization of an emotion's role in virtue allow us to ascribe intentionality, - one must have the right motive - as well as the capacity to apprehend and evaluate the situation correctly.

> The good tempered man, then, is the man that apprehends and evaluates correctly and so becomes angry on the grounds he ought, at whom he ought, as he ought, when and for as long as he ought (Fortenbaugh, 1969, p. 168).

In Aristotle's theory it logically follows that one can go wrong regarding emotional states and emotional reactions in a number of ways. Misapprehensions, poor timing, improper objects, the wrong motive or audience can account for an emotion to be considered 'wrong'.

It may be assumed that to claim emotions can be 'right' or 'wrong' is a controversial, if not an outlandish, statement. But, the claim is one that has attracted a great deal of interest; it is an indirect, but obvious, implication in the recent work in attention deficit - hyperactivity disorder (Phelan, 1996; Barkley; 1997) and of direct implication in the recent and popular work in emotional intelligence (Goleman, 1996). Here the interest has largely centered on the alleged neurological causes of inappropriate emotional reactions and their potential detrimental effects. A more relevant and primary consideration was proposed by Franz Brentano. With evident Aristotelian overtones, Brentano writes: "One loves or hates correctly provided that one's feelings are adequate to their object - adequate in the sense of being appropriate, suitable or fitting" (cited in Chisholm, 1986, p. 52). The significance of this claim will be developed in the section on shame.

Few people would dispute the notion that emotions contribute in a significant way to the richness of a person's life; most would agree that an individual is considered indeed fortunate to look back on a life that has included frequent episodes of joy, pride and love. But this does not give us insight into the nature of these emotions nor does it suggest we are obliged to endorse a complex view of emotion.

Psychologists have relied on examining subjective reports of feelings, overt behavior, and physiological responses in the attempt to measure and establish distinctions between these different experiences. Oftentimes we can accurately infer from overt behavior which emotion an individual is experiencing. We can assume with some confidence that a woman is worried if she wrings her hands and furrows her brow, or that she is angry if she clenches her fists and teeth. With equal confidence we can infer she is ashamed if she blushes and hides her face. Self-reports of her feelings can verify our impressions.

It is customary in these self-reports for an agent to refer to physiological impressions. Internal or physiological changes seem to be inextricably and undeniably connected with emotion. The agent who grimaces and clenches his fist (overt behavior) might report his "blood boils" and his stomach "feels in knots" (physiological changes). A polygraph or "lie-detector" measures these physiological changes exclusively. It is designed to register guilt or anxiety in an alleged criminal by monitoring changes in blood pressure, respiration and heart rates, and galvanic skin response (GSR) (Braun and Linder, 1979). In other physiological examinations, scientists have measured bodily changes in patients that experience fear. Among the physical changes they note are: constrictions in the gastrointestinal areas, the stimulation of the liver by the endocrine glands to release sugar, and increases in the supply of oxygen to the bloodstream (Lang, et.al., 1972).

These studies do not resolve a basic and long-standing question among psychologists as to the nature of an emotion. That question is this: is the feeling of fear the cognition of a dangerous or harmful situation which is then followed by physiological changes or is fear the recognition that our heart is racing and we are breathing rapidly? William James took the latter position.

In 1890, James proposed that we identify and label our emotions based on our ability to interpret bodily changes. An opposing view contends that the cognition of an event in the environment is then followed by physical reactions. A third proposal is that emotions are a complex phenomena that entail cognition, physiological affect, and desire. Let us review each of these views in turn.

Emotions as Affects

William James considers "affect" sufficient for an emotion. In "What is an Emotion", James writes:

> My thesis ...is that the bodily changes follow directly the PERCEPTION of the exciting fact, and that our feeling of the same changes as they occur IS the emotion...Without the bodily states following on the perception, the latter would be purely cognitive in form (cited in Oakley, 1992, p. 17).

Presumably, following the recognition of a slight, I attend to the facts that my voice trembles and my stomach tightens. For James, this affective experience is the emotion of anger. In 1890, Carl Lange independently proposed a similar theory based on his research on blood pressure (Honderich, ed., 1995) In recognition of Lange's contribution, this view is commonly referred to as the James-Lange Theory. The Oxford Dictionary of Philosophy, characterizes this notion as:

> An emotion is the experience of an appropriate physical response to external stimuli. Sadness and anger don't make us cry and strike, rather they are the feeling of doing so (1995, p. 426).

To construe an emotion as merely affect might be to say that someone notices or attends to an impression of a feeling. This affective impression may be noticing a physical or bodily change or it may be a "psychic" feeling. A bodily impression - in the case of shame - would be to attend to that fact, blood having rushed to the face, that one is blushing as the result of some mental distress. In the case of fear, the agent recognizes her throat has gone dry, her heart is racing, adrenaline is flowing, and she is inclined to flee.

One justification for the physiological, affective view is found in James' The Principles of Psychology. It reads:

> If we fancy some strong emotion and then try to abstract from our consciousness of it all the feelings of its bodily symptoms, we find we have nothing left behind, no "mind-stuff" out of which the emotion can be constituted, and that a cold and neutral state of intellectual perception is all that remains (1950 p. 52).

Presumably, without bodily changes all perceptions of events would merely be detached observations, not emotions. This view implies that emotions may follow from cognition but that they are not constituted by these cognitive operations. Contemporary psychologist James Harper holds a James-Lange type view of shame. "Shame", Harper writes, "is an emotion *in response* to a negative evaluation of one's self." (1990, p. 3) Harper refers to a shame experience as an "innate affect" (p. 7).

> Self-esteem and shame are conceptually different in that shame is an affect, and shame-prone identity describes the affective experience of a person with such an identity. Self-esteem is not an affect but more of a cognitive evaluation of the self (p. 143).

An affective theorist might also recognize psychic - or non-bodily - feelings. Psychic feelings can be said to be emotional feelings one has that

cannot be related to or localized in the body; one does not notice a specific bodily change. The general, unlocalized agitation I might feel before a job interview, the buoyancy in my step if all goes well, or the general mood of dejection if not, are examples of psychic states. These feelings need not be specifically identifiable by bodily changes such as an increased heart rate or dryness in one's throat.

Psychic feelings may also be illustrated by those emotions a person experiences over an extended period of time. The love for one's spouse, children, or parents is an emotion most all people share. Here one does not experience this love as constant bodily agitation or continuous feelings, but rather as involving an interest in their projects, warming in their company, desiring to be with them, and so on (Oakley. 1992). Similarly, the lasting grief over losing a loved one is not characterized by constant bodily turmoil and mental distress, but it may color the way we perceive the world and our projects. Antonio Damasio refers to these particular psychic experiences as "background feelings" or bodily states that prevail between instances of clearly recognizable feelings (1994). By way of illustration, a woman may be in a general mood of despondency having lost her husband of forty years. She goes about her business in a quiet but unattached way. Every day may seem to her to be generally overcast. Her general disposition is one of sad resignation. However, when a neighbor inquires as to her condition, the background feelings or emotions of sadness and despair emerge to the forefront of her consciousness. She now "experiences" vivid remembrances of happier times, her eyes well up with tears. According to this version of the affective theory, the despondent "background" disposition is an emotion. James contends, however, only when this background feeling is physically manifested in the act of crying does the widow experience an emotion.

Allowing an affective theory of emotion to entail attending to bodily changes, long-term dispositional states, and psychic feelings seems to be a plausible view. Versions of this view have been attributed to philosopher David Hume.

Many writers interpret Hume to hold a view of emotions as psychic feelings or non-bodily impressions (Kenny, 1963; Foot, 1978, Oakley, 1992). Much like Harper's treatment of shame, Hume classifies emotions as "impressions of reflexion". In Book II of the Treatise of Human Nature, Hume gives this account:

> The passions of PRIDE and HUMILITY being simple and uniform impressions, 'tis impossible we can ever, by a multitude of words, give a just definition of them, or indeed of any of the passions. The utmost we can pretend to is a description of them by an enumeration of such circumstances, as attend them (1967, Bk. II, Pt. I, p. 277).

Oakley interprets Hume to understand emotions as 'simple' reactions formed in response to circumstance. A valid and influential objection to this proposition was advanced by Anthony Kenny (1963). Conceding that Hume recognized emotions to have objects and causes, Kenny understands Hume to contend that an object is only contingently related to an emotion and therefore not constitutive of that emotion. But as both Kenny and Phillia Foot argue in order to feel pride there must be thought about a specific object from which one derives their pride (Lind, 1990). And in defining pride, Hume appears to say just this when he writes "Everything related to us, which produces pleasure or pain, produces likewise pride or humility" (1967, p. 291). Here an agent feels a secondary pleasure which distinguishes pride from joy. Hume illustrates this as the difference between pleasure one feels attending a feast contrasted with the pleasure the host feels: a guest is not connected with the

event in the same way as the host. Relevant conditions Hume imposes on feeling pride are that the object that one derives pleasure from connected with the agent in a "close" relation, that it is relatively rare, fairly constant, and discernible to others (Taylor, 1985).

While it might be argued that Hume is misrepresented as an "affective theorists", the James - Lange theory remains an accurate portrayal of this view. Following the general lead of James, many psychologists have modified the theory to propose more plausible originating sources for the locus of emotion. Whereas James proposed emotions originate in the intestinal area, more recent research suggests the locus to be facial expressions (Tompkins, 1962: Zajonc, 1985) and the sympathetic nervous system (Frankenhauser, 1975).

Some of the most persuasive arguments against the James-Lange theory of emotions were proposed by Walter Cannon in 1927. Physiological change is not a sufficient cause for an emotion since intense physical exertion or an injection of adrenaline will produce the same physical effect as some emotions. The person that has exercised or received an injection may not feel any specific emotion. Secondly, Cannon reasoned many emotions assail us almost instantaneously. At the sight of a poisonous snake, we feel immediate panic; to register a physiological change could not transpire so rapidly. Third, Cannon demonstrated that the emotional states of fear and anger as well as the non-emotional states of chilliness, hypoglycemia, and fever produce the same reactions from the sympathetic nervous system (Solomon, 1977).

The James-Lange theory has been further discredited by studies that have suggested that the same emotional response (e.g., fear, anger) can vary within the same individual according to changing circumstances as well as varying from individual to individual (Lang, Rice, and Sternbach, 1972).

While physiological change is an important component in an emotion, it is an untenable position to claim it is the sole constituent of emotion.

Emotion as Cognition

A leading proponent of the cognitive theory of emotion is Robert C. Solomon. In direct opposition to the affective theory, Solomon explicitly states, " Emotion is neither sensation nor a physiological occurrence, nor an occurrence of any kind" (Solomom, 1980, p. 251). Emotions, he claims, may involve feelings, but feelings are neither sufficient to differentiate nor sufficient to identify a specific emotion. Solomon suggests that emotions can be rational, purposeful and intentional.

An emotion is intentional in the sense that it must *be about* something. To claim that "I am angry" or "I feel angry" is incomplete. Solomon recognizes that an intentional object that angers us must exist; the "object of the emotion is simply 'what the emotion is about'" (1980, p. 257)

> I cannot be angry if I do not believe that someone has wronged or offended me, Accordingly, we might say that anger involves a moral judgment..., an appeal to moral standards and not merely personal evaluations. My anger is that set of judgments (1977, p. 187).

Emotions, then, share a conceptual similarity to beliefs. Being angry "about..." is structurally similar to "believing that ...". Another component of intentionality that Solomon explicitly recognizes is the feature of desire in a set of judgments.

> Most importantly, emotions include intentions for the future, to act, to change the world and change our Selves, to revenge ourselves in anger, to punish ourselves in guilt, to redeem

> ourselves in shame, to restore our dignity in embarrassment (1977, p. 189).

Gabriele Taylor maintains that beliefs play a prominent, essential role in emotion in two ways: identification and explanation (1985). A belief (or beliefs) identifies an emotion for what it is as well as distinguishing it from other emotions. Anger is not envy by virtue of the belief in anger is expressed as, "I believe Smith has slighted me". Envy, by contrast, is, "I believe Smith has personal qualities or material property that I covet". Taylor suggests these identificatory assertions are two-part. In envy, I must judge or believe: 1) Smith has certain qualities I lack, and 2) those qualities constitute an important or an unfair advantage. The structural arrangement of identificatory beliefs is that reason 1 is justified by reason 2. Since I believe certain qualities constitute an unfair advantage, I am inclined to be envious of someone possessing them.

This two-part identification is the basis for the explanatory element in an emotion. I can give specific reasons (1 and 2) for being envious. In and of themselves, these reasons make no appeal to rationality. Consider a simple example of fear as irrational. As a young child, Sarah was bitten by an English bulldog. As a result of the attack, Sarah has some permanent scars. Now, as a young adult, Sarah is visibly shaken and flees whenever she encounters a bulldog. The form of the identificatory belief is: Sarah is afraid of bulldogs because 1). she believes all bulldogs pose a threat; and the threat is 2) their bite is painful and disfiguring. The pain and the disfigurement of dog bites (2) justify believing all bulldogs are threatening (1). Both (1) and (2) are what make Sarah's state of fear intelligible. Either reason, however, need not be rational. Sarah may know that bulldogs - although frightfully ugly - are characteristically a gentle, non-aggressive breed. She may also clearly

remember the youthful indiscretion of provoking one particular dog mercilessly. All other bulldogs she has encountered seem to fit their reputation for gentleness. If we substituted poisonous snake for the bulldog, few would find the reasoning irrational.

The account of emotion as constituted by identificatory and explanatory beliefs gives us an insight into how Solomon justifies his claim of purposefulness. Sarah's fear of poisonous snakes serves to keep her safe. She avoids snakes to avoid serious injury.

Self -regarding emotions (or emotions of self-assessment) require certain beliefs. As "self-regarding" obviously implies these beliefs take the self as the object.

> In experiencing any of these emotions the person concerned believes of herself that she has deviated from some norm and that in doing so she has altered her standing in the world. The self is the object of these emotions, and what is believed amounts to an assessment of that self (Taylor, 1985, p. 3).

In Morality and the Emotions, Justin Oakley proposes that beliefs may be too strong a characterization. To believe some proposition p seems to require that we give our assent to p or that we are convinced that p is true or justified by the evidence. This is a much stronger claim than to say S entertains p or imagines p. In emotions, imagining p is often the case. The structure of the cognitive belief, whether rational or irrational, can follow along the identical lines proposed by Solomon and Taylor regardless of the justificatory evidence. Oakley suggests that our set of judgments in emotions be given wide range encompassing a variety of ways of apprehending the world, ranging over beliefs, construals, thoughts, and imagings (1992).

Even still, to construe emotions as desireless cognition presents a problem similar to that by the affective theorists. Is anger comprehensible

without the component of desire of retaliation? Let us consider the role of desire in emotion.

Emotions as Desire

Alternative accounts could maintain that an emotion is solely desire. A review of the literature finds no subscribers to this position. Emotion as an affectless desire would have to maintain that an emotion is simply an inclination or aim. Anger would be merely the desire to injure. There are straightforward objections to this view. Presumably, the attainment of the respective goals would not elicit any bodily or "psychic" response. Being "affected" clearly seems to be requirement of an emotion. Secondly, as with an objection to the "affect-only" view of emotions, one would be unable to distinguish one emotion from another on the "desire-only view". Fear, shame, humiliation, or guilt may motivate someone to flee and take cover. Righteous indignation, anger or jealously might motivate us to desire that the offending person suffer. The omission of the cognitive element makes these decidedly different situations indistinguishable. Jealous husbands, impartial judges, and robbery victims might wish to inflict punishment; the cognitive component of these desires, when articulated, clearly distinguishes the justification and the object. The judge hopes to rehabilitate, deter others, and/or to protect society while the robbery victim seeks retribution and the recovery of his goods.

Emotion as affective desire is open to the same objections. Although now the view could maintain that an emotion is a desire imbued with feelings, one is still unable to make particular distinctions. Again, both fear and shame may motivate an individual to flee a scene. The cognitive component

differentiates between the avoidance of imminent physical danger in the former, and, in the latter, the avoidance of exposure or disrepute.

The importance of desire in emotion can be seen in an objection to the "cognitive-only" view that maintains emotions are merely a set of judgments. Consider a variation on a frequently used illustration involving two store owners.[2] A customer makes purchases in two stores. The proprietors, A and B, make the sale and give the correct change. Proprietor A gives the exact change because he believes that if he were to cheat his customers it would lead to the eventual ruin of his business. Proprietor B gives the correct change because he understands that that is what morality requires. Regardless of the eventual effect on revenue, agent B believes that stealing is wrong; people deserve to be treated honestly.

One feature of the above example is that the intentional object of the desire distinguishes the emotions of the two store owners. One is motivated by fear and possibly greed, the other by upholding his integrity and recognizing the dignity of others. This introduces the idea of desire as 'will'. Franz Brentano, writing about willing, describes it as an "endeavor to *bring about*, or *preserve*, a given state of affairs; or it may be the endeavor to *prevent* a given state of affairs or to cause it to *cease to obtain*" (Cited in Chishom, 1986, pp. 23-24). This implies that to will something to happen requires that that thing be within our power to bring it about. This distinction is also made clear in Aristotle's discussion of 'choice'.

> There is no choice of impossibilities...but one can wish for what is impossible, e. g. immortality. Also one can wish for results which could not possibly bring about oneself, e.g, the success of a particular actor or athlete, but nobody chooses things like that - only what he thinks could be achieved by his own efforts...a choice is more properly praised for choosing the right object than for being correct in itself (1111b22-25 - 1112a8).

[2] This case has been used to discuss Kant's view of moral motivation and his theory of maxims. See, for example, Feldman, (1976) pp. 100-101.

Aristotle, in a later passage, discusses the importance of choosing and acting from the right desires. The outward manifestation of the two store owners actions may appear to the customer as indistinguishable; on both occasions he receives the proper change. But, for a choice to be morally right, the component of desire must have a proper target. That target must be capable of being realized by our own endeavors and recognized as the praiseworthy alternative. Here we get a sense of desire as the pursuit of that which we believe to be good.

> Pursuit and avoidance in the sphere of appetition correspond exactly to affirmation and negation in the sphere of intellect; so that, since moral virtue is a state involving choice, and choice is deliberate appetition, it follows that if the choice is to be a good one, both the reasoning must be true and the desire right...(T)he function of the practical intellect is to arrive at the truth that corresponds to right (desire) (NE, 1139a20-25).

This feature - the desire to pursue or avoid certain states of affairs - allows us to see emotions as motives for action, something that might be inexplicable on the "cognitive-only' or "affect-only" views. Proprietor B takes pride in his honesty. We may now be in a better position to consider an emotion as a complex phenomena.

Emotions as a Complex of Cognition, Affect, and Desire

In the previous sections we have seen both the importance of cognition, affect, and desire in explaining and in the having of emotions as well as the difficulties we encounter in various attempts to exclude any of these components from an explanation of an emotional experience. To claim that an emotion is a complex of cognition, affect, and desire is to say more than these three elements co-exist: the stronger claim is that these elements are

conceptually linked (Oakley, 1992). The emotion of anger can again illustrate this claim.

An individual, S, has spoken disparagingly about me to my supervisor. In this instance, it is obvious to both my supervisor and to me that the allegation is transparently false. It is equally obvious to both of us that S is widely considered to be a meddlesome and ill-tempered malcontent. The charges by S actually amuse me. But, I, at the same time, may feel agitated on the job because of overwork and I may believe that another individual, S', deserves to suffer some harm for making similar comments of my co-workers. I may also believe correctly that I am not the appropriate person to determine or administer punishment to S'. Therefore, although I simultaneously experience a set of judgments, feel agitation, and desire a certain result, I cannot characterize my emotion as anger simply because these elements are not dynamically related in a specific way to one object or one specific state of affairs.

In order to answer the first research question the analysis of moral shame must, then, explicate the elements of cognition, affect, and desire as interrelated.

Secondly, this view of emotions as a complex experience helps to distinguish different emotions. A frequent claim in the literature is that the emotions "shade into" or "overlap" one another (Taylor, 1985; Kekes, 1988; Dillion, 1995). It is not always clear what writers have in mind when they make this claim; in what follows it will be argued it sometimes leads to mistakes. However, the view of emotions as entailing cognition, affect, and desire permits some clear distinctions. For example, in pride and shame we have the cognition that our standing has been altered, it is elevated and diminished, respectively. The affective reactions are clearly different; pleasure

and pain again respectively. The desire in pride, recalling Brentano, is preservation, whereas in shame it will be some action toward reinstatement so as to have the current state of affairs "cease to obtain".

With the view of emotions in mind, let us turn to the specific emotions.

The Self-Regarding Emotions

"Shame", an article by Robert Karen, begins with this paragraph:

> A mathematics professor in his fifties, who likes to think of himself as dynamic and rakish but who is at the moment "between lovers," stands on the subway platform eyeing an undergraduate. He sees that his gaze is making her uncomfortable. He feels a twinge of shame over this intrusion, but not enough to stop. He files his behavior under "manly aggression" and keeps staring. Then a searing thought enters...his mind. Feeling inexplicably crestfallen, he looks away from the young woman, buries his head in his paper, and seeks out a separate car when the train comes in. He doesn't want people near him...The idea that scorched him was the image of himself, all too believable, as a hungry, unhappy loner, a man...incapable of lasting attachments, staring forlornly at a woman who could not possibly be interested in him. The shame that that image evoked was too hot to handle (Karen, 1992, p. 40).

In this example, some features of what is normally thought to constitute the emotion of shame are present: a transgression, the disapproving gaze of another, the desire to flee and hide, and the painful realization that a man is not all that he had thought himself to be. But are these sufficient conditions to confidently identify this particular experience as one of shame? Embarrassment, humiliation, remorse, and guilt may share these same features.

In this same 1992 article, Karen notes that 'guilt' has so dominated the attention of contemporary psychologists that many of these same

professionals would be "hard pressed" to distinguish it from shame (p. 47). Might Karen have made a similar error by confusing shame with humiliation? The professor's only transgression in Karen's example seems to be one of etiquette: it is in bad taste to stare. To evoke a shame "too hot to handle" seems an overly severe reaction for a breach of decorum. Shame seems reserved for darker times, more serious transgressions.

What actually transpired on the subway platform might be this - the professor has presented himself as something he is not: happy, magnetic, and self-confident. In response, the undergraduate wordlessly deflates his pretentious presentation. His invitational "gaze" is rejected with incredulous "discomfort". He has been vain and vanity invites humiliation, not shame.

Shame and humiliation share structural similarities (Taylor, 1985). Both involve an adverse self-directed judgment and require the notion of an audience. But, as Gabriele Taylor points out, humiliation is primarily concerned with an audience's assessment that an agent merits a fall from a higher to a lower status.

> She will think of herself as appearing contemptible or ludicrous just because she is not, in the audience's view, the sort of person she gave herself out to be...It is that she aspired to the high position when she had no business to do so, or appeared to others to do so, and it is this thought, that she is regarded as presumptuous, which is essential to humiliation as it is not to shame (Taylor, 1985, pp. 67-68).

To be "crestfallen" signifies feelings of dejection and a lack of spiritedness. To stare forlornly suggests the professor is in a condition of dreadful loneliness, not the image one wishes to communicate with "manly aggression". As William Miller recognizes, those individuals that put on airs quite often are unaware of their own shortcomings and inattentive to their self-presentation. "They seek deference from others, and in doing so they

presume on others: those others will get even." It is precisely this presumption, Miller writes, "that enables the humiliation and justifies it" (Miller, 1993, p. 137).

Kekes correctly observes that shame "shades into" humiliation as well as other self-regarding emotions (1988). These two emotions share similar cognitive moves, desires, and, as we saw, affects. But it is not an auspicious start for any study on shame to begin the discussion with an example of humiliation. Whether the professor experiences shame or humiliation, the more important point is that his assessment of himself has changed. This is what I take "self-regarding' to imply. In an emotion classified as self-regarding, the agent takes himself as the subject and the object. He is the one experiencing the emotion and he is experiencing that emotion because of some action or inaction of his. My claim is, then, that the affects, the nature and complexity of the set of cognitive beliefs, and the desires will have unique properties. In the experience of self-assessment, as Taylor points out, the self, as the object, has a new standing.

> In experiencing any one of these (self-regarding) emotions the person concerned believes of herself that she has deviated from some norm and that in doing so she has altered her standing in the world. The self is the 'object' of these emotions, and what is believed amounts to an assessment of that self (1985, p. 1).

Shame is a remarkably complex self-regarding emotion. It is conceded that it does indeed "shade into" other emotions. In one sense, it does so by requiring and entailing these other emotions (e.g. regret, remorse, guilt), but, however complex, clarity about distinguishing features increases clarity about the significance of the individual emotions. To substantiate these claims, let us begin the survey of the self-regarding emotions.

Regret

A reasonable starting point in an analysis of the self-regarding emotions would be with regret. There are several varieties and, unlike many of the other emotions of self-assessment, some of its forms are relatively simple. Secondly, an element of regret is a feature of other self-regarding emotions (e. g. remorse, guilt, shame).

In "Remorse and Agent-Regret", Marcia Baron proposes that the objects of regret can be a state of affairs, one's own actions, or a state of affairs and one's own actions. A constitutive thought in all forms is "how much better if it had been otherwise" (Williams, 1985).

The forms of regret can be thought of in terms of occupying a place on a graduated scale. One feature that establishes its particular place on the scale is the level of one's participation in a regrettable state of affairs. Simple regret (SR) involves no participation on the part of the agent. I play no role in the passage of time, as when seasons change, nor do I participate directly in the fortunes or misfortunes of, say, the Boston Red Sox. But I can regret the passing of summer, the end of baseball season, and yet again another last place finish for Boston.

An example often used in the literature to illustrate different forms of regret is that of a taxi cab driver who hits and seriously injures a small child (Nagel, 1979; Rorty, 1980, Williams, 1985; Baron, 1988). Simple regret is merely to learn of the incident. Taxi driver, X[3], hits and injures child, Y. Z regrets to learn of this unfortunate occurrence and the state of affairs that

[3] Following conventions in much of the literature, these designations will be used throughout this paper: S = an agent; X = some specific, concrete act (an act token), or one of multiple agents (as in X, Y,and Z); E = an event or a state of affairs; E' = an alternative to E; and, t1, t2, t3, etc. = specific times at which an event occurs.

there is one more seriously injured child in the world. But, Z played no part in this tragedy and shares none of the assignable blame. We might propose simple regret is:

SR: S regrets E = S feels a sadness over a state of affairs, E, that was brought about without S's direct or indirect involvement.

We can propose that the emotional components of SR would be that an agent must believe that some other state of affairs, E', is preferable to E, and that the agent is sadden that E exists. The component of desire in SR would seem to be confined to a desire or wish that the world were different than it is. By virtue of the fact that some event contains a bad, harmful or undesirable feature, an agent feels SR. In that it transpired without the agent's input, SR contains the agent's correct belief that nothing he or she has done or could or should have done could change things.

Agent-regret (AR), on the other hand, involves participation. Whereas the appropriate response to simple regret might be, "if only it had been otherwise", agent regret elicits a response that acknowledges the action happened with some level of the agent's participation. The agent is no longer merely a spectator. The cognitive component of agent-regret recognizes the agent himself as part of the object. AR also differs from SR in the affective dimension; it pains the agent differently. In that the agent participated, he is pained by what he has done, not simply at what has transpired. The level of involvement accounts for several distinct varieties of agent-regret. The cognitive component of AR, as Williams writes, includes the constitutive thought, " if only it had been otherwise, and it happened thru me" (cited in Barron, 1988, p. 267).

A basic form of AR is suggested by Descartes (1985) and Solomon (1977). Descartes defines regret as "a kind of sadness...joined to memory of a pleasure that gave us joy. We regret only the good things which...are so completely lost that we have no hope of recovering them" (Trans. Cottiingham, Stoffhoff, Murduch, Vol 1, 1985, p. 402).[4] This type of regret need not have an ethical dimension. Unlike SR, in Descartes's view an agent simply reflects upon happier times in which he participated. Examples might include looking back on high school or college days, one's first love, the outgrown membership in the girl's club or little league, or family outings to museums or Fenway Park when the children were young.

One worry about Descartes's definition is that it does not capture an essential feature of agent-regret. Although the agent participated in the events that he now longs for, the salient feature of this state of affairs is simply that time has transpired, not that the agent has done something specifically regrettable.

A proposed definition of Descartes's view of simple agent-regret is:

SAR: S regrets E = S, at t2, is sadden that E does not contain particular goods and opportunities that were available to S at t1.

Solomon has a similarly restricted view of agent-regret. He claims regret is distinguishable from remorse by virtue of the level of one's responsibility. In regret, the cognition, he claims, is that one does not take responsibility, "blaming whatever disappointment is involved on 'circumstances beyond one's control'" (1977, p. 347). The element of affect, then, is a sad resignation that life oftentimes subjects us to inevitable disappointments, as in "one regrets not having finished high school because of the war" (p. 350). Solomon's account introduces a feature that illustrates a

[4] Hereafter CSM.

second restriction in Descartes's definition. Descartes confines regret to the loss of a good that one once had. Solomon allows for opportunities missed, things we might have had. This version allow us to simplify SAR to eliminate the condition of prior possession. We might say:

SAR': S regrets E = S is saddened that E does not contain, for S, particular goods and opportunities.

Descartes and Solomon have proposed legitimate forms of agent-regret, but they are far too simplistic to range over all the possible cases.

Both Baron (1988) and Amelie O. Rorty (1980) recognize, but do not make explicit, several variations of AR that the accounts of Descartes and Solomon cannot accommodate. Several distinct cases of AR, on a graduated scale, seemed to be implied by their work. Rorty establishes this condition for agent-regret:

> If an agent S regrets having done something, having brought about a state of affairs *E*, then he believes that he has contributed to the occurrence of *E*, and characteristically, he judges that *E* is harmful, bad, or undesirable (1980, p. 489).

There are many things to notice about this view of AR. First, S may have brought about E involuntarily, as in some person or element coerced S to bring about E. Second, S may regret doing something to bring about E - but not regret E . Here some feature of E is regrettable, not E seen as a whole. Third, S might regret E in that S could have averted E coming to be. Under one description of this third variation, 'could' implies 'should'. The cognitive component of this variation would work something like the following. At least two acts, X and Y, were available to S. Performing act X, S is responsible for E. By virtue of X, some part of E is undesirable, bad, or harmful. Had S

performed Y, E would: 1) not contain this bad part; and, 2) be less bad, harmful, or undesirable. Therefore, S should have performed Y. This interpretation of regret directly contradicts Solomon's general claim of responsibility. Taking each of these variations in turn will help make explicit the variations of agent-regret. We can begin by considering the condition of involuntary action in regret.

In his discussion of regret and assigning praise and blame according to features of actions, Aristotle recognizes that force and ignorance can, in certain circumstances, absolve an agent.

> Those things...are thought involuntary, which take place by force owing to ignorance; and that is compulsory of which the moving principle is outside, being a principle in which nothing is contributed by the person who acts - or, rather is acted upon (1109a2-4).

To illustrate regret through coercion, Aristotle's offers an example of a ruler forcing someone to perform some repugnant act, X, in order to protect a family member (1110a2).[5] X is regretted, would not have been considered without external force, but is performed to avoid the more objectionable alternative. Since, roughly, praise and blame are reserved for voluntary acts, S can regret having performed X while remaining supposedly blameless.

We might define this AR type as:

AR1: S regrets E = S is saddened to have to perform X, in light of no viable alternative, in order to bring about E.

[5] Sophie's Choice is a contemporary example. Briefly, that case involves Sophie, her two children and a sadistic German soldier. Sophie and her two children are hoping to board a train to flee Germany during World War II when they are approached by the soldier. He gives Sophie a choice: she can hand over one of her children for execution or, if she is unable or she refuses, he will kill them both.

There are also types of regret that are occasioned by things that happen to us and do not involve deliberation and choice at the time they happen. These cases constitute, as Aristotle characterizes, examples of agents being "acted upon". While coercion is characterized by AR1, involuntary activities are exemplified by one case of the taxi driver. These facts are known about this case. A child darts into the street from between two parked cars. The taxi cab driver slams on his brakes and swerves, but to no avail. The child is struck by the cab and seriously injured.

Simple regret and simple agent-regret would be inappropriate reactions from the driver. Clearly, he was a participant and for him to assume a spectator role (SR) or to simply feel life was less complicated up to the point of the accident (SAR) signals a morally deficient character. The affective dimension of the driver's agent-regret ought to pain him in a significant and personal way. Unlike Solomon's view, the agent clearly bears some responsibility although culpability will be established by other factors.

Providing many conditions obtain, S's agent-regret need not be remorse. Had he been sober, attentive, observing all the relevant laws, his car in excellent working order, and so on, he might curse his tragic misfortune for being at the wrong place at the wrong time, but he would not feel he 'could' or 'should' have averted the tragedy. Nor was he coerced to choose between two objectionable alternatives, as in AR1. The taxi driver was an involuntary participant. We might formulate this version of AR that inadvertently occurs through an agent as:

AR2: S regrets E = S is saddened that X occurred involuntarily through him which brings about E.

A variation on AR2 is also recognized by Aristotle. Here the action by S is "mixed": in consideration of a greater harm by doing Y, S reluctantly, but voluntarily, performs X. He illustrates this possibility with a scenario of a man throwing cargo overboard during a storm in order to save his crew, himself, and his ship (1110a 8-10).

> Such actions...are mixed but more like voluntary actions; for they are worthy of choice at the time when they are done, and the end of an action is relative to the occasion (1110a11-12).

This variation of a regrettable act is one that is performed voluntarily, but contains an undesirable feature. The state of affairs that results is, on balance - or considered in its entirety - the best possible whole although it contains a bad part. Although the bad part is regretted, it is voluntarily chosen and it is accepted as inextricably contained in E.

In "Remorse and Agent-Regret", Baron recognizes this variation and its unique emotional components.

> They *chose* the deed toward which they now feel agent-regret, but they have agent-regret without wishing that they had acted differently or believing that they should have acted differently. Still, they are pained at what they did and wish that they had not had to act as they did (Barron, 1988, p. 264).

According to Baron, the cognitive element is the recognition of X as the best alternative. It is the judgment that: 1) to act in this way is acceptable, and, 2) in the future, if presented with identical circumstances, the agent would condone similar action by himself and by others. S can, at the same time, desire that these circumstances do not arise again. The affective element is the pain from performing the necessary bad part.

Baron illustrates this AR type as the unfortunate situation of an employer firing a trusted, loyal employee during times of cut-backs. For the sake of the company, in dire economic times, down-sizing requires certain individuals must be sacrificed. The employer regrets the obvious hardships this presents the employee, but, all things considered, he judges this to be the right act to perform. Rorty (1980) also explicitly recognizes this variety of regret.

> Conceptually, but not analytically, agent-regret presupposes event regret; but the event that the agent brings about need not be regarded by him as wholly undesirable, or even undesirable as a whole. Characteristically, there is some aspect or feature of E that S considers in a negative light (Rorty, 1980, p. 493).

This type of agent-regret requires a different formulation of the definition. In that E, considered as a whole, might be desirable, we can consider:

AR3: S regrets X of E = S is saddened to choose X, in light of no viable alternative, in order to bring about E.

The coerced / voluntary "mixture" in AR1 and AR3 can be the source of some controversy. It might be argued both Sophie - in Sophie's Choice - and the Captain had a choice. One attempt at a partial resolution to this controversy would be to suggest that in AR1 an agent is forced into a choice between alternatives neither of which she would normally entertain (as in, "to have to perform X"). The Captain and the Employer, in AR3, are forewarned, because of their station, that regrettable circumstances could arise whereby they must make difficult decisions (e.g., all things considered it would be best to choose X).

There is the additional condition wherein an agent unintentionally causes a tragedy for which the agent is blameworthy. S might have been driving under the influence of alcohol or knowingly have been negligent in keeping his cab in good repair. These cases will occasion reactions of "if only I...and I could and should have". Baron, Rorty, and Taylor imply, or explicitly assert, that the inclusion of 'should' in the cognitive move requires us to move on to the emotion of remorse. They claim that one feature of agent-regret is the acceptance of the chosen alternative. Rorty says explicitly: "It is not a condition of regret that the agent would undo the action if he could" (1980, p. 495). Baron recognizes two types of agent regret. That of the taxi-driver under the blameless and under the culpable descriptions, and those that "chose the deed...without wishing they had acted differently (1988, p. 264). Taylor writes:

> Not surprising that the person who feels remorse and the person who feels regret should view differently the relevant past event. If she feels remorse then she wants to undo the action and its consequences which cause the remorse, but when feeling regret she need not think that she would undo the action if she could...It is possible to regret an action but accept it as the thing to do (Taylor, 1985, pp. 98-99).

This might seem clear in AR3. To accept these claims would require us to move on to consider remorse. But this seems hasty. Clearly, in AR1, if one is coerced into hurting a child to avert a greater tragedy, the agent would certainly wish to "undo" that unfortunate circumstance. In a like manner, the taxi-driver, in AR2, curses his misfortune. It would be perfectly understandable to imagine him concocting any number of scenarios that would have put him away from the scene of the accident, as in, "If only I had that second cup of coffee...". These are certainly futile attempts, but nonetheless representative of desires to undo the harm. But the futility of the desire does

not rule it out under Rorty's description; her claim is simply 'if she could'. Clearly, if Sophie could, she would. This claim is not analogous to the feature of moral obligation that posits 'ought implies can', or roughly, the idea that we can only be obligated to do those things that we are capable of doing. There are many instances of remorse and regret that are beyond repair or, shall we say, undoable. The point here is only that wishing to undo an act can apply to regret as well as remorse.

Another objection to the "undo" claim is that, under a certain description, AR3 might carry with it a moral requirement to bring about E'. Act X in E is not, therefore, in and of itself, the thing to do. S may consider X unacceptable as it stands. Technically, something more is needed to undo the present circumstance, as in the present employer feels obligated to assist the trusted employee in finding suitable alternative employment. Likewise, if the Captain was commissioned to deliver the cargo, then we would expect him to ponder how he could replace the client's goods. This is not to say these individuals would "undo" X; but it is to say that both X and E are unacceptable as they stand. Therefore, the individual wishes to undo E by a subsequent act, Y. With Y, E' obtains.

Both Williams and W.D. Ross recognize this complication, one that affects theories of agent-regret - not exclusively remorse - and the emotional acceptance of the result of our actions. Speaking of conflicting moral obligations, W. D. Ross refers to the compunction we feel when confronted by dilemmas.

> When we think ourselves justified in breaking, and indeed morally obliged to break, a promise in order to relieve someone's distress, we do not for a moment cease to recognize a prima facie duty to keep our promise, and this leads us to feel, not indeed shame or repentance, but certainly compunction, for behaving as we do (Cited in Pojman, p. 256)

I take compunction to be an uneasy feeling and remorse to be more than that. In "Ethical Consistency", Williams points out:

> A fundamental criticism of many ethical theories (is) that their accounts of moral conflict and its resolution do not do justice to the facts of <u>regret</u> and related considerations: basically because they eliminate from the scene the *ought* that is not acted on (cited in Baron, 1988, p. 265, underlining added).

In the case of the Captain, the conflict might be: If one contracts to deliver goods to S, then one ought to keep one's contractual promise. This agreement may be superseded, but that does not absolve the Captain of his commitment. The Captain may regret he was unable to honor the contract in a timely manner. He offers the storm and the dangers to his crew as justification. The original promise still carries with it certain obligations. Therefore, none of the previous versions of regret and agent regret can accommodate all regrettable experiences. This new consideration is accommodated in AR4. It reads:

> AR4: S regrets X of E = S is saddened to voluntarily choose X that brought about E and S feels obligated to do Y in order to bring about E'.

In conclusion, the feature of not wishing to undo an action is insufficient grounds to distinguish agent-regret from remorse. In complex cases, agent-regret can entail a moral imperative to "undo" E in the sense that more is required of the participating agent. In simpler cases of coercion and involuntary participation, the desire to "undo" E seems self-evident.

Remorse

Remorse can be distinguished from the various forms of regret and agent-regret in significant ways. A primary distinction is that remorse never implies acceptance of what has been done (Taylor, 1985; Baron, 1988). The constitutive thought in remorse contains from agent-regret the antecedent "if only..." which is necessarily followed by the consequent "and I could and should have done otherwise" (Williams, 1985).

> The move from regret to agent-regret to remorse involves no discarding of notions, but only the addition of layers. One goes from "If only it had been otherwise" (general regret) to " And it happened through me" (agent-regret) to "And I could have averted it" - and if at this stage the 'could' implicitly involves a 'should', we reach remorse (Baron, 1988, pp. 267-268).

In remorse, then, S sees himself as the origin of the conduct unlike the spectator in SR or as an agent reflecting on transpired events in SAR. "Regret", Taylor remarks "but not remorse can be felt about an event for which the agent does not take herself to be even just causally responsible (1985, p. 98). The agent's recognition that he *could* have acted differently distinguishes remorse from AR1 and AR2. In remorse S does not believe he had to perform X nor did X happen involuntarily through him.

How the agent is responsibly tied to a particular deed further distinguishes remorse from agent-regret. In AR3, the agent regrettably chooses the lesser of two evils in order to bring about, as he sees it, the best available alternative. In AR4, by virtue of choosing X which brings about E, the agent is obligated to perform Y, in order to bring about E'. By contrast, the feature of responsibility in remorse is that the agent chose incorrectly; he

recognizes that something should have gone differently and, through him, it could have.

Several authors, at this point, recognize an internal difficulty. Agent-regret can also contain the cognition that one could have acted differently. Baron suggests that the "seriousness" of the act distinguishes the agent-regret from remorse. She illustrates this point with the regret we feel when we are abrupt with someone. In a footnote, she proposes if X (as in a momentarily unkindness) were "more serious, (it) would occasion remorse in us" (Baron, 1988, p. 279). Taylor makes a similar claim. "Remorse is felt about a sin or moral wrong whereas regret is felt about what is in some way undesirable, but not particularly morally so" (Taylor, 1985, p.98)

These attempts to distinguish these emotions seem unpersuasive. Remorse, as has been claimed, never implies acceptance. A past deed has been committed and the agent recognizes, at the time when it was performed, that a viable alternative was open to him. This is not the case with regret. Even in AR4, X is acceptable by virtue of Y. Although regret entails an undesirable, bad, or harmful feature, the agent chooses that act from among the field of possible alternatives that minimizes the harmfulness. But, to "minimize" harmfulness need not have any relationship to the"seriousness" of the state of affairs that an agent may find him or herself in. The mistake here may be to assume remorse requires an intense reaction, whereas regret occasions milder responses. But, I see no reason to assign a mild reaction to Sophie: one of her children died. She and the taxi driver are entitled to feel, and indeed we expect them to feel, a profound regret. For even though regret may entail the idea that, all things considered, X was the right thing to do, both alternatives, X and Y, may be very bad. Recall William's implication that the lesser of two evils is still an evil. Regardless of a viable alternative, I see no

reason to take any evil - in and of itself - lightly. Remorse, on the other hand, looks back on the possible alternatives and concedes that the agent could and should have done otherwise. As Taylor goes on to note "the aspect of the action which causes remorse...is regarded (as) outweighing any possible good that may come from it...It is impossible to feel remorse and yet believe that overall it was the right thing to do" (1985, p. 99). Looking back, the cognitive component in regret is different. This fact seems sufficient to distinguish the emotions. The appeal to a calculation of "seriousness" ought to be rejected.

The recognition of a more desirable alternative and the acceptance of the responsibility for a wrong choice has led some writers to consider remorse as a constructive emotion. Taylor cites Max Scheler's view of remorse as "necessary for the guilty to be reestablished" and "an emotion of salvation" (p. 101).

> In remorse...the agent takes a positive attitude toward the situation and himself. It constitutes a "change of heart", or a totally new attitude, and through it the agent can regain his powers and rebuild himself (p.101).

Taylor reflects a similar sentiment.

> No action need follow from regret, or even be expected to follow. This is not surprising if the agent may think that all things considered she did the right thing, or did what had to be done. But we do expect some sort of action from her who feels remorse...She wants to undo what she has done...(and) she would normally be expected to try and do something towards repairing the damage (p. 99).

For many of the same reasons, these comments also seem wrong. One of the difficulties at arriving a precise definitions of emotions is that many authors tend to attribute too many features to an emotion. By doing so, one

emotion overlaps or "shades into" another and lines of demarcation blur. With emotions overlap does occur; it is important, however, that the overlap is legitimate. Remorse is one such emotion with a blurry perimeter.

Scheler and Taylor might be mistaken for these reasons. Even if we were to grant that remorse differs from regret in that in the former the agent would undo that action if he could, this does not commit us to accept any future predictions of behavior or are we committed to propositions that future intentions are required by remorsefulness. Consider this example. S has a history of multiple arrests for driving under the influence. Last night he borrowed the family car, drove to a bar, had too much to drink, and crashed the car on the way home. His family is now burdened emotionally and financially as well as inconvenienced. S reports that he feels remorseful. Had he to do it over, S would do things differently. But, as I see it, remorsefulness alone need not entail "a change of heart". More than remorse is needed to attribute considerations of remediated future conduct. We can verify this claim in two ways.

First, if we can supply identificatory and explanatory reasons which satisfy the requirements of the definition of remorsefulness without a change of heart, it would then appear Scheler's claim fails. These plausible and relatively commonplace reactions seem to suffice: S is remorseful he crashed the family car because 1) he may, as a result, be incarcerated (which will interfere with his drinking); or, 2) his family will be reluctant to let him borrow the car again; or, 3) he had intended to enlist the support of a designated driver and had he, he could have had a number of more drinks.

Second, there seems nothing incompatible with the idea that an agent will be, can be, or is remorseful about past conduct while being well aware - indeed expecting - that the future will contain the same type of activity. The

despair and the hopelessness heard in the self-reports of many individuals addicted to various substances is precisely because of this connection between genuine and heartfelt remorse and their acknowledgment of anticipated substance-abusing future conduct. The report of remorse alone is not enough to assuage the counselor's skepticism. A counselor can believe the client is truly remorseful while still lacking the required elements of motivation, responsibility, and/or atonement necessary for remediation. Therefore, it seems to be an invalid deduction to claim that if someone would undo an action if they could, then we are entitled to make predictions of that agent's future behavior. It is in a very literal sense that we can understand Descartes when he writes: "remorse does not concern the time to come, but rather the present or past" (CSM, 1988, p.351, underlining added).

These points would indicate that a suitable definition of remorse be restricted to the past or present tense, free of future intentions, and devoid of any comparative calculations regarding 'seriousness'. We might consider:

S is remorseful about X = S is saddened to have performed X, desires X could be undone, and recognizes that he could and should have acted differently.

As we continue on the graduated scale, repentance supplies the legitimate additional components in cognition, affect and desire.

Repentance

Descartes draws a distinction between remorse and repentance in terms of cognitive certainty. Remorse requires doubt. Its function is a prompting toward inquiry to ascertain "whether the object of our doubt is good or not

(Sec. 177, p. 392). Repentance, on the other hand, entails the belief that what we have done is wrong.

> Repentance is...a kind of sadness, which results from our believing that we have done some evil deed; and it is very bitter because the cause lies in ourselves alone. But this does not prevent it from being very useful...because our repentance prompts us to do better on another occasion (Sec. 191, p. 396)

All the elements of an emotion are here. The agent has the cognition that he is responsible for a wrong act. The affect is a notably intense sadness. It is clearly an active emotion; one desires to conduct oneself differently on future occasions. It could be that Descartes is making a similar linear move that is analogous to that of regret to agent-regret to remorse: remorse "shades into" repentance as doubt clears away. But it seems intuitively correct that repentance entail remorse, not supplant it. To repent a person must first believe - with a remorseful certainty - that a wrong was committed.

In his unpublished manuscript, "Repentance and Criminal Punishment", Jeffrie Murphy offers a definition of repentance that explicitly requires remorse as a component. It reads:

> Repentance is the remorseful acceptance of responsibility for one's wrongful and harmful actions, the repudiation of the aspects of one's character that generated the actions, the resolve to do one's best to extirpate those aspects of one's character, and the resolve to atone or make amends for the harm that one has done (Murphy, unpublished manuscript, p. 3).

This is a complex description. If we were to combine atonement with making amends, there will be four necessary conditions an emotion must satisfy in order to qualify as repentance. These are: [A] responsibility with

remorse; [B] an honest review of an undesirable character trait; [C] the resolve to reform; and, [D] the resolve to atone.

Repentance is a concept that occupies considerable interest in theological literature. In the sections on repentance in the Catechism of the Catholic Church, (CCC) all the requirements of Murphy's definition (designated as [A], [B], etc.) are accounted for. The remorseful acceptance of responsibility is covered in the discussion of confession.

> The confession (or disclosure) of sins...facilitates our reconciliation ....[A] Though such an admission man looks squarely at the sins he is guilty of, takes responsibility for and thereby opens himself again to God (Ed. Ratzinger, 1994, Sec. 1455, p. 365).

Following confession, if an agent is repentant, he will do penance. Penance is a testimony that one is willing to reorder one's life and attempt to sin no more.

> Absolution takes away sin, but it does not remedy all the disorders sin has caused. Raised up from sin, the sinner must still recover his full spiritual health by doing something more to make amends for the sin: he must "make satisfaction for" or "expiate" his sins. This satisfaction is also called "penance" (Ratzinger, 1994, Sec. 1459, p. 366).

Repudiation of a character trait and the resolve to reform are covered in the definition of interior repentance and contrition. Interior repentance is:

> [B] A radical reorientation of our whole life, a return,...an end of sin, a turning away from evil, [C] with repugnance toward the evil actions we have committed...it entails the desire and resolution to change one's life (Sec. 1431, p. 360).

The CCC considers contrition to be of the utmost importance. It is defined as the "sorrow of the soul and [B] detestation for the sin committed,

[C] together with the resolution not to sin again" (Sec. 1451, p. 364). Atonement [D] is expressed and achieved in various ways. Common ways are through fasting, prayer and almsgiving; these acts make amends in relation to oneself, to God and to others, respectively.

Murphy observes that repentance means "not merely a resolution not to commit wrong again, but a resolution that includes a desire to make amends" (p. 7). And for Murphy, the component of making amends entails remorse over what has been done.

Murphy's analysis of repentance seems correct. His definition seems acceptable.

Guilt

Much of the literature on the emotion of guilt concentrates on an analysis of the objective state of "being guilty" and not on the emotive state of "feeling guilty". This focus can be attributed, in part, to the fact that, unlike shame, guilt has direct legal connotations. For some act, X, to be wrong, there must be some source of authority that prohibits X. Here right and wrong can be defined in terms of permissibility. If some authority with jurisdiction over an agent permits certain conduct, it is 'right'. Conversely, if this same authority prohibits certain conduct, it is 'wrong'; acts of this sort are not permissible as they constitute a violation of the prohibition. As Gabriele Taylor observes violations are punishable.

> Guilt, unlike shame, is a legal concept. A person is guilty if he breaks a law, which may be of human or divine origin. As a consequence of this action he has put himself into a position where he is liable to punishment...Given only that he is under the legislation of the authority in question, violation of the law is sufficient for guilt (Taylor, 1985, p. 85).

In a legal situation, then, guilt involves the notions of breaking a law established by an authority under whom one lives and, thereby, deserving of punishment (O'Hear, 1976). Nothing in this analysis attempts to explain an agent's feelings of guilt. It is plausible that an agent can acknowledge the objective state of his being guilty and his liability for punishment while, at the same time, he can feel guiltless. One justification for this emotive stance can be that the agent considers the law that he has violated to be a bad one. Examples might include resisting a military draft, violating laws requiring segregation, or obstructing access to an abortion clinic. In these instances the agent recognizes the law as binding but considers the law itself to be incorrect or immoral. This insight seems to be overlooked in many influential views on guilt and shame.

Psychoanalysts Gerhart Piers and Milton Singer advanced theories of guilt and shame which focus primarily on the objective state of being guilty. Almost fifty years ago Piers and Singer formulated a distinction between guilt and shame that continues to influence psychologists and philosophers. Using Freudian terminology, Piers and Singer claim that an agent experiences guilt when one transgresses a boundary set by the "Super-Ego" (or an authority figure), whereas shame is felt when a goal set by the "Ego-Ideal" (or one's self-conception) has not been reached (Piers and Singer, 1951). Summing up Piers's view, John Deigh writes " Shame is felt over shortcomings, guilt over wrongdoings" (1995, p. 133). But Piers's view fails to clearly distinguish the objective state of "being guilty" with the emotional experience of "feeling guilty". Clearly, it is possible for an agent to do wrong yet feel guiltless as well as for an agent to feel guilty but to be innocent.

Frequently the emotive aspect of guilt is overlooked because various theorists attempt to define guilt by contrasting it with shame in terms of internal or external sanctions or guides. Presumably laws are external guides while standards are internal. Piers' view clearly classifies guilt as external, shame internal. A scientist in general agreement with Piers is sociologist, Helen Block Lewis. She has written:

> Shame is about the self. We say, I am ashamed of myself. I am guilty for something. Guilt is out there in the real world, something you did or something you thought that you shouldn't have thought. Shame is only about the self (Cited in Karen, p. 47).

In Helen Merrell Lynd's On Shame and the Search for Identity, a different picture emerges. For Lynd, guilt is internal while shame is primarily a social, external experience.

> Guilt, or self reproach, is based on the internalization of values, notably parental values - in contrast to shame, which is based upon disapproval coming from outside, from other persons...Ruth Benedict makes a similar distinction...Guilt (is) a failure to live up to one's own picture of oneself (based upon parental values), with shame, a reaction to criticism by other people...(so) shame is a more external experience (1958, p. 21).

Another attempt at this distinction, as noted by Lynd, was made by anthropologist Ruth Benedict in her study of Japanese culture. She concludes a shame culture is one characterized by a fear of expulsion from the group. One fears ostracism; this motivation to conform comes in part from a sense of shared values - an external consideration. By contrast, a guilt culture is one wherein individuals control their behavior by their own internal compasses (Dizard, 1996, p. 22). Again, on this view, shame is external and construed to result from recognized violations of social conventions or agreements. With

guilt, pressure is exerted by reference to an ideal that may be entirely of one's own private construction. We see then that Benedict's view is just the opposite of Piers'. Benedict's characterization has been credited with being the most widely accepted definitions of these two emotions (Lynd, 1957). But on her view guilt is merely a subjective realization that one has failed to meet an internal standard. It is not clear why guilt would be the obvious emotional reaction to this insight as opposed to shame, frustration, or discouragement.

Many current educational theorists, however, subscribe to Benedict's formulation. Brown University professor, William Damon proposes a similar idea so as to distinguish guilt from shame:

> In general...shame always remains to some extent other-orientated...in the eyes of others, one's behavior is contemptible. In this regard it differs from guilt, with relies more exclusively on one's own evaluations rather than on the real or imagined evaluations of others (p. 22).

These formulations seem too sketchy. On Benedict's and Damon's view an audience is required to shame a person; but this notion can not account for the instances when one may feel shame when no one else is present. Feelings of guilt, on the other hand, cannot exclusively rely on one's own evaluation. As mentioned in the case of the bad law, an agent can perform prohibited behavior and feel guiltless. However, effective social reformers acknowledge their legal violations and accept their punishment. Similarly, some criminals will readily admit their guilt but remain emotional unaffected. A bank-robber may admit his guilt, but that confession may not tell us anything about his cognitive operations or his emotional state.

So four general emotional responses to guilt seem possible. These are: 1) to be guilty and feel guilty, 2) to be guilty and feel guiltless, 3) to be guiltless and feel guilty, and, 4) to be guiltless and feel guiltless.

Various justifications for these emotional responses can be offered. To feel guilty when one is and to feel innocent when one is guiltless are rational reactions. Regarding feeling guiltless when one is in fact guilty is more complicated. A variety of justifications might apply. One explanation might be that the agent does not hold himself responsible for the act; he might appeal to a presumed genetic predisposition, to a poor upbringing, or to an ignorance of the law. As mentioned, another justification might be that the agent considers the law that he has violated to be a bad law. Here he could accept both responsibility and punishment while, at the same time, he believes he acted properly. Other examples might be that of an agent who simply lacks the cognitive / emotional sophistication to be negatively affected by his conduct or of an agent who simply has no respect for legal and moral principles.

Feelings of guilt are included in an alternative views to Taylor's which establish an additional requirement of guilt. In order "to be guilty", S commits some act X that an authority figure prohibits and which causes harm to another person. The Oxford Companion to Philosophy (OCP) defines guilt, in part, as:

> The state imputed to a person who has done moral or legal wrong...Full acceptance and realization of guilt involves remorse and desire to expiate the wrong done...Yet guilt is not simply self-reproach; it is inseparable from awareness of the harm, or neglect, brought about to the others affected by one'saction or inaction (ed. Honderich, 1995, p. 329).

A number of necessary conditions emerge in the OCP definition. One condition of guilt presupposes a specific relationship of an agent to an authority figure. Under this description in order for an agent to feel guilty, an authority's prohibition must be viewed by the agent as both correct and

binding. This requires several cognitive steps. For an agent to recognize and accept that he is guilty, he must acknowledge that he has violated a prohibition that has been established by an authority, he assents to that authority as binding, and he accepts that the authority's prohibition is, in fact, correct (Taylor, 1985). This acceptance of the correctness of the prohibition is an essential component to being and feeling guilty. The inclusion of this condition seems to be an improvement on the earlier, less elaborate theories.

Furthermore, on the OCP analysis acceptance of guilt entails a requirement to atone or make amends. On this view we see structural similarities with repentance. Two conditions of repentance were: 1). the remorseful acceptance of responsibility for a wrongful act; and, 2). the resolve to make amends. Amends, in the case of guilt, is the making of restitution to the offended party. To be legally guilty overlaps with a requirement of remorse as defined in R1. Legal guilt is incurred by doing what one knew (or could have known) to be wrong when one could and should have done otherwise (van der Haag, 1975). Therefore, to feel guilty the agent can not appeal to ignorance of the prohibition.

As with the OCP view, several sources include the requirement of 'harm to others' as necessary to guilt (Deigh, 1995; Rawls, 1971; Taylor, 1985: van der Haag, 1975). For example, in A Theory of Justice, John Rawls illustrates a case of guilt with an example of a man who cheats an associate. In transgressing the rights of others, an agent wrongly advances his own interests (p. 482). In an obvious consideration of the harm to others clause, Rawls claims guilt is reconciled by reparations and forgiveness. In the acknowledgement and acceptance of reproofs and penalties, the desire an agent has is for "reinstatement" (p. 483). In reaction to the same transgression, moral shame, on the other hand, is the acknowledgement that,

by cheating, one has not lived up to "a conception of moral worth he has set himself to achieve" (p. 482).

Rawls makes an important distinction between the reactions one expects in guilt and shame. An ashamed person will anticipate to be treated with derision and contempt because he has fallen short of a standard and shown himself to be "unworthy of association with others who share his ideals. He is apprehensive lest he be cut off and dejected" (p. 483). A guilty person, on the other hand, expects to engender anger and resentment from the injured party. "Guilt is relieved by reparation and the forgiveness that permits reconciliation; whereas shame is undone by proofs of defects made good, by a renewed confidence in the excellence of ones person" (p. 484).

Bernard Williams makes much the same point in Shame and Necessity. What arouses shame in an agent is the expectation of eliciting contempt, avoidance, or derision from others; in guilt, the agent expects, because of some act or omission to act, anger, resentment, and indignation (Williams, 1993). Here shame is metaphorically tied to "sight', the agent wishes to hide or disappear, whereas in guilt the agent hears the sound of an internal, disapproving judge. In disappearing, one hopes shame dissolves, but if one were to disappear with guilt it is as though "it would come with me" (1993, p. 89). In that guilt requires reparations, it is intimately connected with others; shame redounds only on the self.

> We can feel both guilt and shame towards the same action. In a moment of cowardice, we let someone down; we feel guilty because we have let them down, ashamed because we have contemptibly fallen short of what we might have hoped of ourselves...What I have done points...towards what has happened to others(and) in another direction to what I am (p 93).

And this analysis suggests that the cognitive operations for certain self-regarding emotions are multi-step. Michael Lewis, in "Self-Conscious Emotions: Embarrassment, Pride, Shame, and Guilt", advances a version of this multi-step process with his Cognitive-Attributional Theory.

His cognitive-attributional model is as follows:

SELF-CONSCIOUS EVALUATIVE EMOTIONS

A. STANDARDS AND RULES

B. EVALUATION

C. ATTRIBUTION OF SELF

SUCCESS	FAILURE	
HUBRIS	SHAME	GLOBAL
PRIDE	GUILT/ REGRET[6]	SPECIFIC

Lewis contends that the self-regarding emotions of pride, guilt, and shame are elicited when "one makes a comparison or evaluates one's behavior *vis-a-vis* some standard, rule, or goal (SRGs) (Lewis, 1993, p. 563). Pride occurs when one judges one's behavior to have succeeded in maintaining or achieving one's SRG's and shame or guilt is elicited when the agent concludes he has failed (1993).

The first cognitive-evaluative step is what SRG's the agent accepts as binding on him. "All of us have beliefs about what is acceptable for others and ourselves in regard to actions, thoughts, and feelings" (p. 567).

The second step is the the agent's two-part evaluation of his particular conduct in regard to the SRG's. The first part is whether the agent accepts responsibility for the act (internal attribution) or whether the agent attributes

[6] Lewis (1993) p. 566

responsibility to some other party or circumstance (external attribution). If the agent assumes responsibility, the second aspect is how the agent assesses a particular success or failure (1993). As discussed in the section on self-esteem, personal evaluations vary greatly. For example, a passing grade of B may constitute success for one person and failure for another.

The last aspect of Lewis's cognitive-evaluation model is the attribution of the self. The emotional state of guilt, Lewis proposes:

> is produced when individuals evaluate their behavior as a failure but focus on the specific features or actions of the self that led to the failure. Unlike the focus in shame on the global self, the focus in guilt is on the self's actions and behaviors that are likely to repair the failure (1993, p. 569).

Lewis's implication that the emotion of guilt is conditionally good in that it might instigate reformative behavior is a controversial assertion. Equally controversial is his claim that shame is necessarily and always a global assessment of one's character. However, Lewis does propose a plausible account of the cognitive operations that must obtain in order to be and to feel guilty. Combining Lewis's account with those of OCP and Rawls, the necessary and sufficient conditions of guilt will read:

An agent supposes and accepts that he:

1. is responsible for and has committed some act, X.
2. X is prohibited by an authority figure, A, and
3. that A has jurisdiction over him. And,
4. that A's prohibition is correct and binding, and
5. by performing X, he has harmed others, he is, therefore,
6. deserving of punishment, and,
7. he believes he has an obligation to make amends.

We might formulate a tentative definition of guilt as :

G1: S is guilty = S merits punishment and feels an obligation to make amends for having violated a correct and binding prohibition, mandated by a legitimate authority, that has harmed others.

With the exception of the "harm to others" clause, there is general agreement in the literature on the objective state of guilt (Rawls, 1971; Solomon, 1977; Taylor, 1985; Dillion, 1995). "To <u>be</u> guilty", an agent, under the jurisdiction of an authority, violates a prohibition. However, substantial disagreements arise in explanations of the "harm to others" clause and in the content of "to <u>feel</u> guilty".

Taylor suggests that Rawls has a needlessly restricted view of guilt that cannot account for such (Kantian) notions as failed suicide attempts, laziness, and 'rusting talents' (1985). All her examples display the crucial feature of doing what may be forbidden, while, conceivably, influencing only the agent in question. Allowing for Taylor's objections, the necessary and sufficient conditions for guilt would now read:

An agent supposes and accepts that he :

1. is responsible for and has committed some act, X.
2. X is prohibited by an authority figure, A, and,
3. that A has jurisdiction over him. And,
4. since A's prohibition is correct and binding, he is, therefore,
5. deserving of punishment, and,
6. he believes he has an obligation to make amends.

G1 would be revised as:

G2: S is guilty = S merits punishment and feels an obligation to make amends for having violated a correct and binding prohibition mandated by a legitimate authority.

By virtue of the violation of a legitimate prohibition, G2 entails the consideration that harm has, or might, result to oneself or to others. However, it, unlike G1, does not make harm to others a necessary condition.

The importance of the requirement for making amends, or atonement, for a wrong done is a notion that is often overlooked in discussions which center on external/internal distinctions. An external view can easily dismiss an important cognitive component to guilt; atonement and "reinstatement" involve internal operations. Yet a solely internal view cannot account for forgiveness from and restitution to some audience.

One point Williams seems to make - when he says that if a guilty agent were to disappear, guilt would go with her - is that guilt is a burden. It is a pain an agent feels about herself. Following G1, we might say that in guilt a number of cognitive operations have taken place. An agent, S, has done harm by violating a prohibition as well as harming herself or another. Some type of disfigurement has taken place. Repair can take the form of restitution or repayment. In repayment, part of the harm is undone. But if this repayment is entirely external, it is hard to see how any personal disfigurement is repaired. Here imagine a entirely passive defendant standing before a judge. She admits her guilt and accepts her sentence, but she feels unrepentant. No internal conversion has occurred nor will it occur and this suggests we must withhold forgiveness. For if we were, under these conditions, to reaccept the unrepentant defendant, it would seem to imply we value the 'right' or honorable conduct as lightly as she. This seems to be the sense in which we

are to understand the religious directive that absolution must be withheld if it is evident to the clergy that the confessor is unrepentant. Lacking repentance, the prohibited act is implicitly condoned as well as the acknowledgment of a possible "hardening of the heart" (Taylor, 1985). Repayment, only in the sense of 'doing the time', is one explanation for recidivism. The (external) debt is erased while the disfigurement (internal) remains.

An analysis of guilt therefore requires the inclusion of cognitive and affective components. Among them are: the recognition of harm, a violation of a correct and binding prohibition, the acceptance of responsibility, a disfigurement, and repentance. The affective experience is one of pain. The desire is to both rehabilitate oneself (the resolution to change) and to make amends to others.

If it is true that these conditions constitute the emotion of guilt, it seems clear the internal / external distinction will fail to be enlightening. More can be said about guilt. This will be taken up in the section on shame. Let us now turn to embarrassment and humiliation.

Embarrassment

Embarrassment, humiliation and shame share similar structures. All three emotions are self-regarding and require a relation to the social world in which one's actions and one's standing are subject to appraisal (Miller, 1993). In all three an agent is self-consciously aware of how his position is seen or may be seen by an audience; this objectified view reveals to the agent a status that is inferior to what he had previously believed or hoped it to be (Taylor, 1985). One method to distinguish these three emotions can be accomplished

with much the same strategy that was used with the linear development of the various forms of regret. But here the distinction is not drawn by the level of participation of the agent to the same object (e.g., one's relation - as spectator or driver - to an injured child); with the various individual forms of embarrassment, humiliation, and shame the objects differ.

Unlike humiliation and shame, one can respond with embarrassment to praise, to the recognition for doing good works, or for the sake of amusement. An agent might relate a self-effacing anecdote to his colleagues to alleviate tension or, for much the same purpose, his colleagues might intentionally embarrass the agent knowing it will be received in the right spirit. Here the motivation (or object) is amusement, not degradation (Miller, 1993). Descartes considers those that willingly subject themselves to this "gentle mockery" to be individuals who exhibit a cheerful temperament, a tranquil soul, and a quick mind (1985). And, as will be seen, self-effacement can, at times, be a protective tactic that makes one immune to humiliation.

Praise and public recognition of good-works can cause embarrassment. An agent responds with an ineffectual and awkward dismissal of the praise: he attempts to divert attention, to change the subject. Carrying an elderly person's groceries, helping one's parents, or comforting a child that has lost sight of her mother are not acts done for public recognition. An additional feature of this type of embarrassment can include an empathic concern for the person in need of assistance: the helping agent can be equally embarrassed in the knowledge that those being helped might experience a tinge of embarrassment to be seen as needing such assistance.

The feature of awkwardness is unique to embarrassment and it is an element in all the various forms. Embarrassment entails the feeling that one is unable to respond appropriately to a particular incident. Examples might

be that I have arrived at the party overdressed, or underdressed, or with a tear in my pants. Others at the party might feel embarrassed for me.

Here the notion of an audience is essential to embarrassment as is not the case with shame. I am embarrassed by my dress only because I am seen. In shame, an agent's final judgment concerns himself only. He is degraded not relative to an audience, but absolutely: he believes he has been revealed to merit - and to be truly represented - by this new lower status (Taylor, 1985). In embarrassment, an agent is seen as awkward only in this particular instance; the audience imposes a demand that the agent is unable to meet (e.g., I can think of nothing to do or nowhere to go to change my inappropriate dress).

Embarrassment, then, is localized to a particular incident. As such, it rarely reflects on an agent as a whole as does shame and humiliation. By way of illustration, my car may stall in traffic. After all the obvious gauges check out and knowing little about mechanical things, I do not know whether to check the fuel line, the spark plug wires, the fuses, the carburetor, and so on. My embarrassment stems from the fact that my associates in the car pool (or the drivers behind me) are imposing a demand on me to respond to the breakdown. This example brings out two other features of embarrassment: tension and confusion. Tension arises from the imposition of a demand from the audience for an agent to respond coupled with the knowledge that he or she is unable to do so. This inability causes confusion: "What shall I do?" In embarrassment, as soon as the agent resolves the conflict, the feeling subsides. I might notice the distributor cap is loose or I call road assistance. Having found my way around the obstacle, the incident passes. I am reinstated with my associates and we move on to new matters. I probably should know more about cars, but I have made no claims to be knowledgeable

in this area. Had I, this incident could have been humiliating. We might formulate a definition of embarrassment to be:

E1: S is embarrassed = S is observed by an audience as unable to respond in a timely manner to an awkward situation.

A distinguishing feature of embarrassment, then, is that of an adverse judgment of an individual in a given situation, not of the individual as a whole (Taylor, 1985). The next time it is my turn to drive my associates in the car pool might subject me to embarrassing comments, but these remarks would take the specific form: "If there is car trouble, then we will be in some difficulty because...". By contrast, humiliation and shame concern weightier matters reflecting upon the individual as a whole.

Humiliation

Humiliation follows embarrassment along the linear structure by being a darker emotion. Embarrassment oftentimes is a light, humorous emotion. It can be self-imposed to alleviate tension. To humiliate oneself or to be humiliated by others can involve comic overtones, but this is an emotion with elements of brutality and 'rough justice' (Miller, 1993).

As with embarrassment and shame, humiliation requires an audience under some description. Quite literally, an agent is embarrassed only when seen. If I fumble about, alone on a deserted road, unable to locate the problem with my stalled car, I might be frustrated, angry, and regret having allowed my car to fall into disrepair but, without outside observers, I need not be embarrassed. As in embarrassment, with humiliation, an audience plays an

essential role. But, unlike embarrassment, humiliation requires a certain posture from the agent.

Had I presented myself to my associates as a expert car mechanic, and proved to be completely inept at restarting the stalled car, I would invite humiliation. Here we see why the audience is essential to humiliation. It is their view that I have been pretentious in the estimation of my skills. In their view, I deserve a fall. The "object" of humiliation is the fall. To be humiliated, then, is to be assessed by the audience as deserving of a lower status than the agent previously held or assumes he merits. In humiliation the audience informs the agent of his misjudgment concerning his place in the social world. Unlike shame, it need not involve the breach of a norm or a moral wrong; to be humiliated the audience merely rejects the agent's self-assessment. They communicate to the agent that he has over-valued his status or worth and that he has attempted to elicit outside agreement for this inflated estimation. To be humiliated is stronger stuff than the good-natured teasing of embarrassment. Whereas one primary reason for intending embarrassment is to provide amusement, in humiliation it is to degrade (Miller, 1993). This is not to say 'to be humiliated' requires either a malevolent intention or correct justificatory beliefs. What is essential in humiliation is that the agent now believes that he looks foolish or contemptible in the audience's view. (Taylor, 1985). The observer merely asserts that the agent aspires to or assumes he inhabits a higher position than the one to which he is entitled. "If shame is the consequence of not living up to what we ought to, then humiliation is the consequence of trying to live up to what we have no right to" (Miller, 1993, p. 145).

Recalling the mathematics professor eyeing the undergraduate in Karen's example, we can assume she had no malicious intent nor did she

derive any pleasure from the professor's pain. Simply put, in response to his unrelenting gaze, she needed to respond. In doing so, she made it evident there was no attraction. The pain of humiliation was grounded in the professor's belief that he appeared ludicrous: he presented himself as something he was not. But, the undergraduate need not know, or even assume, the professor held any particular view of his irresistibility. Without knowledge of the professor's self-assessment, the undergraduate did not know if she was party to humiliation.

Humiliation shares a necessary connection with an audience as does embarrassment. In embarrassment the audience demands a response and recognizes the agent's awkwardness. In humiliation the audience assesses the agent. This assessment need not be accurate and the agent need not agree with the assessment. So a primary feature of humiliation is the fall from a higher to a lower status, not that the agent accepts the new degraded status as merited. It is simply that the agent is viewed by an audience as presumptuous; he has assigned himself a position, or presented himself as a person, above that that he appears to be entitled. By doing so, he appears contemptible. It is possible the audience is wrong. The observers may be unqualified to assess the agent's true qualifications. Now an agent may feel anger; he perceives this assessment as an unjustified slight. Whether he deems it important to correct this impression relies on the importance he attributes to his connection with the audience. And he still may feel humiliation whether the fall is justified or not, for it is still a fall. A proposed definition for humiliation is:

H1: X is humiliation = df. X is a feeling of presumptuousness and deflation for regarding oneself more highly than an audience believes is merited.

Self-Esteem

It seems indisputable that a necessary requirement for a flourishing life will be some sense of pride in oneself. Robin Dillion states empathically, "Self-respect is undeniably something of great value" (1995, p. 10) and philosopher John Rawls suggests without respect for oneself and for one's life plans, "all desire and activity becomes vain and empty, and we sink into apathy and cynicism" (1971, p. 440). Psychologist Nathaniel Branden considers self-esteem to be "the single most important psychological subject in the world" (1994, p. xii) while the California Task Force on Self-Esteem proposes the lack of self-esteem to be the central cause of most personal and social ills (cited in Kirkpatrick, 1992).

Presumably, people are entitled to respect simply by virtue of being human. One formulation of Kant's categorical imperative expresses this view. It states respect for the moral law requires us to treat people as ends in themselves (Kant, 1964, p. 96). This imperative expresses the intuitively self-evident principle that a person should never be treated merely as an animated tool for the benefit of another. By appealing to this imperative, slavery and segregation have been faulted and subsequently outlawed on the grounds of violating the inherent dignity of the individual. Martin Luther King Jr. frequently referred to Kantian imperatives. One such expression of the dignity of all people comes from King's "The Ethical Demands for Integration".

> Deeply rooted in our political and religious heritage is the conviction that every man is an heir to a legacy of dignity and worth...There is no graded scale of essential worth; there is no divine right of one race...Every human being has etched in his personality the indelible stamp of the Creator (1986, pp. 118-9).

However, it seems equally self-evident that self-esteem can be excessive or pride misplaced, that self-respect can rise and fall, and that others must earn, can fail to earn, or can lose our respect. These notions imply that a person ought to conduct him or herself in particular ways in order to merit our respect: we might suggest he or she is obligated to adhere to certain objective standards of conduct and decency. And what applies to others will also apply to oneself, for if I am to respect myself, satisfying certain requirements must somehow figure in my calculations as well. Yet it appears paradoxical to have to earn something to which one is entitled by virtue of one's personhood. How can we lose - or fail to earn - a birth-right? Will these puzzles be resolved if we can establish 'self-esteem', 'self-respect', and 'pride' as distinctly different emotions with unique properties or are they, in fact, synonymous? In this section these are some of the questions that will guide the attempt to arrive at clear and precise definitions of these three terms.

The literature on these emotions is enormous. Pride and honor has occupied the attention of philosophers long before Aristotle, while contemporary psychologists devote their careers to defining the nature and role of self-esteem. Views are widely divergent. Some writers believe self-respect and self-esteem are synonymous (Rawls, 1971). Others clearly distinguish them (Tefler, 1968; Darwall, 1977; Taylor, 1985) while a third group proposes self-respect to be a component of self-esteem (Branden, 1995). Various accounts characterize these emotions as feelings, beliefs, attitudes, sources of motivation, or dispositions. A further complication is that there is no consensus on whether these emotions are subjective (psychological) or objective (moral) experiences.

Those writers who distinguish these emotions nevertheless agree that the common thread that connects respect, esteem, and pride is their concern

with worth. Esteem is presumed to be the appraisal of an object's worth, respect the recognition and the appropriate response to the worth of an object, and pride and honor the reward due that object for its great worth (Dillion, 1995). Let us take these emotions in turn.

The earliest, and what many consider to be the definitive account of self-esteem was formulated by psychologist William James. In 1890, James proposed:

> I, who for the time have staked my all on being a psychologist, am mortified if others know more psychology than I. But I am contented to wallow in the greatest ignorance of Greek. My deficiencies there give me no sense of personal humiliation at all. Had I "pretensions" to be a linguist, it would have been the reverse...With no attempt there can be no failure; with no failure no humiliation. So our self-esteem in this world depends entirely on what we back ourselves to be and do. It is determined by the ratio of our actualities to our supposed potentialities; a fraction of which our pretensions are the denominator and the numerator our successes: thus,
>
> $$\text{Self-Esteem} = \frac{\text{Successes}}{\text{Aspirations}}$$[7]
>
> (cited in Branden, 1994, p. 305)

This view is a clear expression of self-esteem as a subjective, relative concept. Not only do personal values and aspirations guide the evaluation, but each person will calculate different personal qualities according to how central they may be to their self conception. The sense of worth a person has thus turns on his ability to interact with his environment as he constructs it and only in those areas he deems important.

---

[7] Psychologists normally refer to self-esteem in terms of one's spirits as high or low. In James's formula 1 would signify the highest self-esteem possible while 0 would designate the lowest or the unsuccessful attainment of all a person's aspirations. This paper will follow the current usage of the adjectives 'high' and 'low' hereafter.

Two points seem especially noteworthy in James's influential formula. First, on this account, self-esteem is perfectly neutral about ends. The successful attainment of a goal to which I aspire is the sole concern in my calculation, not judgments of its moral permissibility or of its social benefit. Whether I aspire to be a theologian or a burglar is irrelevant.

Second, an inherent flaw presumably surfaces in a comparison of two individuals with vastly different levels of aspirations. Consider X and Y, two highly intelligent and talented individuals. X has only a few mundane and self-interested aspirations at which he easily succeeds. Y has grander, altruistic plans for which she studies and toils relentlessly. She succeeds at most but not all. Although X's fraction is mathematically greater than Y's, even on a subjective account it is difficult to agree X will, much less should, appraise himself more highly than Y. Two concerns with James' version are then: 1) the neglect of the moral dimension or the social utility of one's aims, and 2) the stringency of one's aspirations.

In 1971 when John Rawls published A Theory of Justice it contained what some considered the "most detailed examination of shame and self-respect in recent moral philosophy" (Nussbaum, 1980, p. 397). For Rawls, self-respect and self-esteem are synonymous. Self-esteem (or self-respect) has two components. It is defined as "a person's sense of his own value, his secure conviction that his conception of his good, his plan of life, is worth carrying out" (Rawls, 1971, p. 440). Secondly, self-esteem "implies a confidence in one's abilities...to fulfill one's intentions" (p. 440).

The concept of a person's 'sense of worth' is defined as "1) having a rational plan of life, and in particular one that satisfies the Aristotelian Principle; and, 2) finding our person and deeds appreciated and confirmed by

others who are likewise esteemed and their associations enjoyed" (p. 440). The Aristotelian Principle is defined as:

> Other things being equal, human beings enjoy the exercise of their realized capacities (their innate or trained abilities) and this enjoyment increases the more the capacity is realized, or the greater the complexity (p. 426).

The Aristotelian Principle asserts that a person will enjoy an activity to a greater extent if it both taxes his capacities and if it continues to embody new complexities even as the agent becomes increasingly familiar with the activity. These are the components of desire in the emotion, the "principles of motivation" (p. 427). By way of illustration, checkers gives way to chess, as "the simpler things he enjoyed before are no longer sufficiently interesting or attractive" (p. 428) . Whereas one quickly encounters all possible game options in checkers, chess contains endless variations and intriguing new challenges. Similarly, a person rereads Aristotle's Ethics or continues to practice Bach because revisiting works of immense sophistication and subtlety holds the possibility of new insights and heighten pleasures. Rawls claims that when we cease to benefit from an activity - or if our associates believe our time to be misspent - we will soon lose interest. And Rawls claims that the support of associates enhances a person's chance of succeeding at difficult projects; without support and approval an individual cannot maintain the belief that the activity is worthwhile (p. 440). In addition to one's associates confirming one's sense of worth, they are also considered by Rawls to be valuable by setting an example of excellence to which to aspire. The "companion effect" to the Aristotelian Principle - another principle of motivation - is defined as the arousal of desire in us to be like those of our associates who exercise well-trained and developed talents (p. 428). Having a

rational plan of life which satisfies the Aristotelian principle is, then, the criteria for being appreciated by one's associates.

On Rawls' account, a person will have high self-esteem if: 1) she believes her plan of life is worthwhile, 2) she is confident she can carry the plan out, 3) the plan embodies complexities that continue to tax, but do not overwhelm, her abilities, and, 4) she is appreciated for her efforts by associates in a position of close proximity or connection. The emotional components - cognition, the identification of and belief in a worthy pursuit; affect, the pleasure from accomplishment, mastery, and approval; and desire, the motivation to improve and develop - are all accounted for in this formulation.

Although more elaborate, Rawls's notion of self-esteem shares structural similarities with James's version. Martha Nussbaum observes, on Rawls account, the subjective conditions of believing a life plan to be worthy and the confidence to carry it out are sufficient conditions for self-esteem.

> Rawls thus implicitly denies that the objective (or intersubjective) value of my pursuits and the truth of my beliefs about them are at all relevant to the issue of self-(esteem) and shame (1980, p. 398).

But Rawls' denial seems more than implicit. As with James, there is a subjective feature which introduces a neutrality that affects both activities and ends. The application of the Aristotelian Principle, Rawls' states, "is always relative to the individual and therefore to his natural assets and particular situation" (p. 441). And on Rawls' account, an association is afforded a remarkable insularity. Claiming associations are groups by virtue of the match between the collective aspirations and ideals, he writes:

> The activities of many groups may not display a high degree of excellence. But no matter. What counts is that the internal life of these associations is suitably adjusted to the abilities and wants belonging to them...The absolute level of achievement...is irrelevant (1971, pp. 441-2).

So just as self-esteem can be calculated by the particular success one experiences and is recognized for, likewise shame, as one might expect, is "relative to our aspirations, to what we try to do and with whom we wish to associate" (p. 444).

It can be inferred from this Rawlsian analysis that feelings of low self-esteem can originate from the subjective realization that one's goals are unimportant, morally suspect, viewed as insignificant by our associates, or from the belief that one is ill-suited to achieve them. Presumably, all these impressions require verification from the group. Although all others may admire him, James, as well, implies that it is only the group well-versed in psychology who are capable of an informed assessment of what he aspires to be and has accomplished.

In the above quotation, 'But no matter' is a witty little sentence, but it ought to give us pause. It simply is not true that associations are as insulated as Rawls claims them to be, nor is it true that the aspirations of the members of groups are appraised as distinct from and incommensurable with other associations. Although a person may be internally disconnected or unassociated with a group of surgeons, philosophers, educators, or rocket scientists, he is likely to be cognizant of the required intelligence, fortitude, and talent necessary to maintain such lives. I see no reason, that in assessing his own group, the talents and accomplishments of others should not figure into his personal calculations.

The comments on shame indicate another area of concern. If I consider both my aims and ideals worthy and that I am well-suited to pursue them, I

am a candidate for high self-esteem. Those with whom I associate must verify that my actions and aspirations are in accordance with my stated goals and that these goals are worthy. However, my associates might be as misguided as I am in what we consider to be worthy aims and honorable behavior. Street gangs are a concrete example.[8] 'Admirable' behavior often entails drug-running, assault, theft, and murder. Rawls's treatment of associations offers a feature of insulation to the gangs members as if to imply societal and legal scrutiny will have a negligible effect on gang associates. It is, however, indisputable that most criminals know there is strong outside disapproval for their activities.

In many ways Rawls's theory of self-esteem seems extensionally equivalent to that of James: the same objections apply. So Rawls's theory of self-esteem has some difficulties that need to be avoided in the formulation of a definition, and in the assumed significance, of self-esteem.

Considered by many to be the "father" of research on self-esteem, psychologist Nathaniel Branden, has written extensively on this emotion. Noting that people with low aspirations "are not conspicuous for their psychological well-being", Branden recognizes an inherent difficulty with James' version (1994, p. 306). Branden proposes self-esteem to be defined as "the disposition to experience oneself as competent to cope with the basic challenges of life and worthy of happiness" (1994, p. 27). This definition entails two components: self-efficacy and self-respect.

Self-efficacy is described as the ability to master the challenges "enacted by our values" (p. 34). Self-respect is the conviction that we are worthwhile, valuable beings with an inalienable right "to live and be happy" (p. 36). Self-esteem, according to Branden, is, then, an attitude of entitlement

[8] See, for example, Isaiah Anderson's "Code of the Streets", Atlantic Monthly, February, 1992.

and possibility, not an evaluation of achievement. Pride, Branden proposes, contemplates what has been accomplished while self-esteem "contemplates what needs to be done" (p. 40).

Branden's version of self-esteem differs from James' in that the latter calculates the level of self-esteem based on accomplishments. Branden diverges from a Rawlsian account with even stronger subjective claims. Evaluative recognition from one's associates plays less, if any, role in Branden's version. Self-esteem is "what I think and feel about myself, not what someone else thinks or feels about me" (p. 52). Regarding the self-evaluation of my abilities and aspirations, "mine is the only judgment that counts" (p. 146). When conflict arises between personal values and societal prescriptions and prohibitions, Branden suggests an individual "challenge any and all authorities" (p. 152).

Objecting that James' version both lacks specificity and that is a prescription for anxiety - by virtue of comparing oneself to others - Branden advises individuals to assess their level of integrity. On his description, integrity is the fit between one's aspirations, beliefs, and ideals with one's behavior. Acting in accordance with our beliefs is 'congruent' behavior. People of integrity act congruently and, therefore, merit high self-esteem. But Branden's appeal to 'integrity' hardly seems to constitute an improvement either over James or Rawls. If one has only oneself to answer to, beliefs can simply change so as to coincide with one's present behavior.[9] This technique is explicitly advocated by therapist Matthew McKay. The very objective of the cognitive behavioral therapist is to raise a client's self-esteem by encouraged that person to "change the way you interpret your life" (1987, p. 3). A

[9] This is how a non-judgmental client-centered therapy operates. Its originator, Carl Rogers, considered success of therapy was determined by the quantitative increase in a client's positive self-regarding statements (see Client-Centered Therapy, 1965, pp. 137-8).

person's internal critic is "constantly evaluating...by comparing you to an ideal of perfection" (p. 100). The way to "beat the critic" is to repeat mantras of self acceptance until a new attitude begins to emerge (p.13).

It seems to be a legitimate objection that Branden's account lacks specificity. Just a few of the concepts that remain undeveloped are: 'basic challenges', 'worthy', 'happiness', and 'integrity'. Still, many psychologists and psychotherapists subscribe to the general theory of self-esteem advanced by Branden. Variations on Branden's version include defining self esteem as: conscientious effort toward challenges regardless of outcome (Bednar and Peterson, 1995), the courage to be 'authentic', or true to oneself, irrespective of another's opinion (May, 1983), to the extreme view of advocating a complete disregard of external influences in the calculation of self-satisfaction (Dyer, 1977).

A fourth and influential account of self-esteem is from Stanley Coopersmith. In The Antecedents to Self- Esteem, the result of an extensive six-year research study, Coopersmith defines self-esteem as an approving or disapproving subjective self evaluation that calculates a person's beliefs of his worthiness and significance.

> In short, self-esteem is the personal judgment of worthiness that is expressed in the attitudes the individual holds toward himself... in which the individual examines his performance, capacities, and attitudes to his personal standards and values"(1967, pp. 4-7).

Coopersmith claims that an individual's personal values are objectively influenced by the general social norms of one's group (p. 244). Regardless of their level of talent or capacities, his study participants reported a relatively uniform acceptance of their particular social group's values regarding intelligence, achievement, and social success (p. 244). However, within social

groups, Coopersmith discovered markedly different personal ideals and aspirations (p. 245).

This second finding of Coopersmith's research proposes individuals will prioritize the accepted, "internalized" set of socially defined values differently as well as to subjectively assign different weights to each specific feature within that set (p. 245).

One example of the first instance could be this: in society A, academics, social position, physical attractiveness, and athleticism are highly valued. Success in academics and social interactions may constitute reason for person A to esteem herself highly whereas person B may look only to his physical attractiveness and athletic ability to measure his worth. An illustration according to the second finding might be three people who regard, say, academics highly in their calculations may assess similar accomplishments differently. Reflecting on an end of the year grade point average of 3.5 may please A, leave B indifferent, and distress C.

A third important finding in Coopersmith's study was that those people who scored highest on self-esteem inventories were those who set high personal expectations for themselves (p. 246). Favorable self-assessments have, then, no apparent connection with "lowered personal standards that permit judgments of success at lower levels of performance but rather with higher standards that are objectively attained" (p. 246). If this is in fact true, it helps to rectify an apparent flaw with James's formulation: a mathematical equation that calculates low aspirations will not have a decided advantage. We naturally resist the Jamesian equation model precisely because it tends to favor fewer aspirations and this seems unjust. But, it is not at all clear that this finding should be accepted uncritically. The only evidence that Coopersmith offers to support this proposition appears to be:

"Persons with high self-esteem generally conclude that they are closer to their aspirations than are the individuals with low self-esteem who have set lower goals" (p. 246). This merely expresses a trivial truth. Regardless of the number or the stringency of aspirations, an agent who is 'closer' will always be one with 'higher' self-esteem.

A second appealing finding is that general social norms tend to permeate an individual's field of aspirations. "The similarity of value preferences in spite of manifest differences in capacity and achievement suggests that the value preferences that people actually employ...are those that are generally espoused by their group" (p. 244). This appears to offer further support to question the "insulating value" Rawls attributes to associations. Coopersmith proposes that people within social groups generally recognize the same features to consider in their calculations, but the individual assessments of the ultimate value of particular features, the satisfaction derived, and the perceived level of personal accomplishments will vary and tend to override the group norm. "Although shared standards make it likely that persons will emphasize and value the same goals, they may differ in how they appraise their attainment of those goals" (p. 245). This finding, on the other hand, would seem to display a sympathy for Rawls's speculation that as interests and talents are fine-tuned by the Aristotelian Principle and the companion effect, people will gravitate towards one another to form associations.

Coopersmith's findings, then, suggest that even within a social group, infinite variations affect the calculation of self-esteem. To illustrate, let us suppose, a social group has four preferred values that individuals will, in some form, internalize. Lets call these the set {A, B, C, D} where A = intellectual achievements, B = economic security, C = moral behavior, and, D = social position. Now Coopersmith's findings say several things. One is that although

members of the group generally recognize the same qualities, individuals will prioritize them differently. So for three members, X, Y, and Z, we can have: X favors {A, B, C, D}, Y favors {D, C, B, A}, while Z favors {A, D, B, C}.

The suggestion that different agents weigh the same feature differently, adds an enormously complex variable. Here the sets for X, Y, and Z could maintain the same ordering, as in {A, B, C, D} but the weights (adding up to 100 for simplicity) might be X = {30, 25, 24, 21}, Y = {50, 30, 18, 2}, and Z = {70, 15, 10, 5}. Variations multiply exponentially when we add different priority orderings and more elements to the set.

The difficulty hardly stops there, for Coopersmith acknowledges that different people will view their accomplishments differently, as we saw in the grade point average example. To illustrate this, consider that X and Y favor economic security as their highest priority and little else from the social set matters to them. So for X and Y let us assume their sets are {B, D, A, C} with the weights of {85, 8, 4, 3}. Lets further suppose that X and Y have identical holdings, assets, and responsibilities. Even in this implausible situation, it is easy to imagine, as Coopersmith points out, that X and Y may very well "appraise the attainment of (their) goal" differently. X may feel very secure while Y, preoccupied as she is with money, is riddled with anxiety.

We might conclude that self-esteem is afforded little objective validity by virtue of internalizing a general set of a group's values. It seems more plausible, as Rawls suggests, that individuals do in fact form associations with others who share the same prioritized ordering, similar assigned weights, and recognize similar levels of accomplishment.

Coopersmith concludes that the 'antecedent' conditions that best foster high self-esteem in the formative years are parental acceptance, clearly defined rules, and respect. Published in 1967, at the beginning of a socially and

psychologically liberal era in America, Coopersmith summaries his study with a conservative warning.

> We should restate...that higher levels of self-esteem are associated with greater demands, firmer regulation, and parental decisiveness rather than with a tension-free, permissive, and otherwise idealized environment (p.261).

To summarize, these findings suggest that group norms are inclined to influence the content of the field of aims for all members of the group although individual aspirations, assessments of accomplishments, and weights assigned within the field of aims tend to be subjectively determined. Calculations from person to person will show great variations.

Although there exists fundamental disagreements, these four main theories might agree on a formal definition of self-esteem to be:

SE1: x is self-esteem = df. x is the level of self-approval/disapproval in reaction to the subjective appraisal of the worthiness of one's chosen aims, of one's perceived suitability to pursue those aims, and one's level of anticipated and actual accomplishments.

The components of the emotion of self-esteem would be: cognition - the evaluation of aims, accomplishments and anticipated accomplishments; affect, the pleasure or displeasure from the perceived fit between aims and the suitability of personal talents; and, desire, the motivation to realize, maintain, or to reflect upon successes.

Self-esteem initiatives have fallen into disfavor, in large part, because researchers have concluded that truly objectionable behavior can co-exist with high self-esteem. William Kilpatrick notes that some of history's worst scoundrels "seem to be quite self-satisfied" (1992, p. 42). A 1996 report in "Psychology Review" studied the self-reports of individuals convicted of

serious crimes, among them such people as neo-Nazis and spousal abusers. The study reports that these individuals consistently expressed high levels of self-approval (cited in Glencoe McGraw-Hill. 1997, pg. 3). These reviewers claim that self-esteem ought to be in reaction to having "mastered something significant" (p. 3). "Real self-esteem is a by-product of real learning and achievement" (Kilpatrick, 1992, pg. 41). But, these objections restrict self-esteem to the past, to reflections on accomplishments. However, SE 1 and the accounts of Rawls and Branden state that one can have high self-esteem if one feels adequate to pursue one's life plan. Branden's requirement of being competent to cope with life's challenges is necessarily future-orientated. John Deigh, in "Shame and Self-Esteem: A Critique" proposes that a person may identify,

> for purposes of self-assessment, with the person he believes he will become, his present self having little bearing. Consequently, he may even at the time be leading an all-together easygoing and frivolous life while exuding self-esteem (1983, p. 136).

An adequate definition of self-esteem ought to entail the subjective appraisal of potential and actual worth. These four theories do not exclude anticipated accomplishments; even James's version seems to imply he will be recognized for his expertise.

The objections voiced against the individual theories may not, however, offer counterexamples that require us to amend our definition of self-esteem. The problem may be in the alleged significance of the emotion.

One reason to resist the seemingly attractive psychological view of self-esteem is the fact that as moral agents we necessarily appraise the kind of people we are as well as the kind of lives we lead. Moral agency is not within our volitional control. A moral dimension is a necessary component of every

human life and, therefore, it is essential in our calculations of that life. Critics might want to insist upon self-esteem recognizing some objective verification of the moral permissibility or social utility of one's aims in self-calculations. Others might argue self-esteem must be associated with activity; speculation on what one might accomplish would not be adequate grounds for self-assessment. Presumably, on William James's account he could be accurately assessed only by himself or other psychologists since success at his profession was what "he backed himself to be". Recalling our definition of humiliation, we can imagine his humiliation if he was discovered by his associates to be ignorant of some fundamental principle of psychology. However, it is an incoherent feature of his theory to attempt to apply the notion of "with no attempt, no failure and no failure, no humiliation" to one's character. Here Kilpatrick's objection to self-esteem initiatives is well taken. It is puzzling that someone can be a scoundrel, know that he is a scoundrel, intend to remain a scoundrel, and yet have high self-esteem.

Kilpatrick's objections notwithstanding, nothing in the proposed definition of self-esteem, nor in the separate theories reviewed, offers assurance that the aspirations and qualities appraised are necessarily good and praiseworthy. Nor need they be. The subjective nature of the appraisal merely requires that someone hold a favorable view towards oneself on the basis of certain aims or accomplishments. For just as the aspirations and accomplishments can be misguided, so to can the judgment. Here the neo-nazi helps illustrate the point. It would indeed be a monumental accomplishment to stir up a previously harmonious community into a hotbed of racial animosity and violence. Setting that objective is adventurous, achieving it, no small feat. So to derive pleasure from that dubious accomplishment might be understandable under one description. But we need only recall the Aristotelian

insight that sweet things seem bitter to the man with a fever and "as different things seem valuable to boys and men, so they should to bad men and to good" (1176a15). We need not contest the validity of the neo-nazi's report that he is pleased with himself; he unquestionably is. But, we can question the credibility of the reporter himself; we can object that his reasoning and judgment are wrong and his aspirations misguided. But we cannot appeal to self-esteem to sort out our difficulty. Any attempt to interject an objective moral significance into self-esteem is, by definition, unjustified. It neither requires nor necessarily entails an appeal to morally correct beliefs. One may, of course, consider moral merit in their self-assessments. Most do. When this occurs it is not by virtue of the demands of a subjective appraisal of personal aims, but from the objective considerations required by self-respect and pride. To substantiate this claim let us turn now to these emotions.

Pride

Various editions of Aristotle's Nicomachean Ethics (NE) translate the virtue of *megalopsuchia* as 'pride', 'greatness of soul', 'magnanimity', and 'self-respect' interchangeably (Trans. Ross, 1925; Thompson, 1953). The term 'self-respect' has become the popular choice in modern times. This may be primarily because various historical accounts use 'pride' to denote a vice, a virtuous disposition, a subjective attitude, or an objective fact. Modern writers may tend to prefer 'self-respect' considering it to be immune from negative connotations or theological overtones. As mentioned, there is overlap with the emotions of self-assessment as well as a propensity by psychologists to concern themselves with self-esteem, philosophers with self-respect, and the historical accounts with pride. However, one feature of the historical accounts

that recommends them is the discussion of "proper pride" as a correct measure of self-regard for the right reasons. An understanding of this notion is important to the general discussion of the self-regarding emotions as well as self-respect and shame specifically.

In this section I will begin the discussion of pride by reviewing Aristotle's account of excessive and deficient beliefs of one's worth. In the literature, his accounts are generally considered to be accurate and uncontested. Aristotle's view, then, will help clarify the target of proper pride. Next, I will introduce various comments by Aristotle, Descartes, Hobbes, and Isenberg on the conditions and requirements for feeling proud. These comments pose some curious puzzles for an analysis of shame. Last, with an emphasis on comments by Hume and Taylor, I will discuss how pride is connected to some other self-regarding emotions and review various definitions.

In his customary form of analysis of the virtues, Aristotle discusses magnanimity, or pride, as a state of proper measure (or a mean) between two extremes - one of excesses, the other a deficiency. A vice of excess - vanity - is characterized by the man who thinks himself "worthy of great things, being unworthy of them" (1123b8). The deficiency is to think oneself worthy of less than one is properly entitled, to be unduly humble. The mean is for a man to "estimate himself at his true worth" (1123b14). If that worth is great, a man is entitled to feel "magnanimous".

Aristotle defines another excessive form as conceit - the over-estimation of one's worth and abilities. "Conceited people...being ignorant of their own limitations...attempt honorable undertakings for which they are not qualified, and...are exposed as incompetent" (1125a26-30). Conceit, therefore, invites humiliation. Aristotle also refers to arrogance or "superciliousness" as characterized by those people born with advantages but without virtue; for

"without virtue it is not easy to bear the gifts of fortune inoffensively,...and supposing themselves to be superior to everyone else, they despise other people, and behave as fancy takes them" (1124a29-b2).

A contemporary explanation of excessive pride by Gabriele Taylor follows Aristotle's distinctions of vanity, conceit, and arrogance. Vanity is commonly thought to be an excessive preoccupation with oneself and an inordinate desire to be admired by others. Conceit connotes an exaggerated sense of one's abilities and the belief that all others pale by comparison. Arrogance, on the other hand, seeks no comparison. An arrogant man takes his superiority for granted, with no concern for evidence to support his claim of elevated position, status, or talent (Taylor, 1985). Taylor points out it is conceivable for a man to be vain, conceited and arrogant simultaneously. Preoccupied with oneself, a man might believe if he were to be compared with others he would come out "infinitely superior" (p.48). Believing that, any comparison with others becomes superfluous. For both Aristotle and Taylor, one requirement of proper pride is to hold correct beliefs regarding one's capabilities, character, and merit.

Aristotle's discussion of pride is complex; it is an explication of the nature and value of the proper appreciation of merit, the grounds for merit, and the appropriate attitude toward public recognition. A proud person, on Aristotle's terms, is rare. Since "it is impossible without nobility and goodness of character" to be genuinely proud, true pride is merited only by those that have achieved noble characters (1124a5). The reward for a noble character is honor, the greatest of external goods and the appropriate response to the dignified status of greatness in "every virtue" (1123b30). The grounds for feeling proud are, then, the proper concern for virtue and the correct judgment that one has a virtuous character.

We might assume Aristotle intends us to understand that a person is virtuous so as to merit and receive honor. He claims honor is to be loved for itself and that it is the "end of the political life" (1095b20). It, by necessity, follows virtue. So this causal relationship seems to imply that one is virtuous (the means) in order to be honored (the end). But a few lines later Aristotle remarks that political "people seem to seek honour in order to convince themselves of their goodness...so evidently in their view goodness is superior to honour" (1095b26-30). In Aristotle on the Human Good, Richard Kraut proposes how we ought to understand the virtue/honor relationship.

> I take Aristotle to be saying...(people) want to be honored for their virtue by those in a position to assess their character. In other words,...they love virtue even more than they love honor, and they seek honor as an indication they they have succeeded in their efforts to become virtuous. If they are honored by the right people for the right reasons, then they can be more confident that they really do have the virtues, and no adjustments are needed in the way they lead their lives (1989, p. 234).

Honor, on the Aristotelian account, is now seen as the public confirmation of a virtuous disposition and as a motivational force to continue living nobly. From these comments, we can extract a possible insight about shame. It seems implicitly clear that to be dishonored (shamed) by the right people for the right reasons signals a failure or a shortcoming that will require an adjustment. What is explicitly clear from Aristotle's account is that honor must come from the right sources and greeted with "moderate" pleasure (1124a2). Honors conferred by "ordinary people" should be discounted, presumably on the grounds that these people are incompetent to judge all-round excellence in the virtues. And honor should be the source of only moderate self-satisfaction for no external good "can be enough for perfect excellence" (1124a10). Pride, what Aristotle calls "the crown of the virtues",

is, then, a feeling of moderate self-satisfaction for achieving - and being recognized by the right people as having achieved - excellence in all the virtues.

Recognition and confirmation by associates is important in several other views of pride, none stronger than in Hobbes, and possibly none more perplexing than in Descartes. The view from the audience, for Hobbes, is all that matters.

> The value or WORTH of a man is, as of all other things, his price - that is to say, so much as would be given for the use of his power - and therefore is not absolute but a thing dependent on the need and judgment of another (cited in Dillion, 1995, p. 9).

On this account nothing is of intrinsic value. Virtue, as with any other quality, has value if and only if it is valued by one's associates or by the conventions of one's society. Justice, conscientious effort, honesty, and courage may or may not, at some particular time, be praiseworthy. It depends entirely on societal conventions. In Hobbes's view, there is no Aristotelian sense of an individual evaluating himself appropriately. "Dignity is 'the public worth of a man...set on him by the commonwealth'" (Cited in Dillion, 1985, p. 10).

It is on the Hobbesian view of pride that a shame-culture is comprehensible. In a shame-culture, pride and self-respect are synonymous with public respect. Public esteem is the greatest good and it is merited by an individual by conforming to the code that his society has established. By conforming to this code, he establishes his reputation. Public recognition establishes the appropriate level of pride or shame a man may take in himself.

It is tempting to characterize a shame-culture as appearances versus reality. Shame-cultures seem to suggest that it is how a man appears to his

group, not how he actually is, that dictates how he is received by the group. And that reception of one's appearance dictates or establishes his value. But, in a shame-culture, as in Hobbes's notion of pride, appearances are reality. And, this is because, as Taylor points out, when there is no distinction between public and private evaluations, "a person can assess himself only in terms of what the public thinks of him" (1985, p. 55).

Numerous arguments can be offered to show that this view is flawed. To consider attitudinal conflicts over segregation and slavery might sufficiently illustrate the flaw in Hobbes's proposition. Clearly, all societies have a one time or another subscribed to bad codes. Not long ago in America the social policies generated by appeal to the intrinsic value of blacks accounted for some particularly offensive codes. But, if Hobbes's view were true, segregation laws would have, at one time, been correct and justifiable by virtue of majority agreement on the presumed capabilities or social utility of blacks. Secondly, when slavery or segregation were operative in society, those individuals that objected to these policies could expect resistance and devaluation simply in virtue of opposing the operative code. It is evident in hindsight that those individuals who opposed slavery deserved respect for their convictions, not derision; they had legitimate grounds for pride. Third, unjust laws set the "price" too low thereby frustrating the talents, the aspirations, and the self-respect of blacks. These laws were, therefore, morally objectionable.

Descartes finds some middle ground between Aristotle and Hobbes. As with Aristotle, proper pride, for Descartes, is intimately connected with being honored by others. In The Passions of the Soul, he writes:

> 'Pride' is a kind of joy based on the love we have for ourselves and resulting from the belief or hope we have of being praised by certain other persons. Thus it is different from the internal satisfaction which comes from our belief that we have performed some good action...For seeing that we are esteemed highly by others is a reason for esteeming ourselves (CSM Pt. 3, Sec. 204, p. 401).

Unlike 'self-satisfaction', which requires no third party acknowledgment, Descartes claims that both pride and shame are inseparable from and grounded in the recognition of others. "A good or evil which is in us, or which has been in us, produces pride and shame respectively, <u>when</u> it is related to the opinion which others may have of it (Pt. 2, Sec. 66, p. 352, underlining added). And unlike Aristotle, when it comes to pride, Descartes appears far less discriminatory with the composition and qualifications of the audience. He offers the following directive:

> For although the common people are very bad judges, yet because we cannot live without them and it is important for us to be an object of their esteem, we should often follow their opinions rather than our own regarding the outward appearance of our actions (Pt. 3, Sec. 206, p. 401).

Given his views on how one should verify that which one holds to be true, this position seems quite remarkable.[10] His comments on pride and shame seem irreconcilable with this passage from his <u>Discourse on the Method.</u>

---

[10] For a comprehensive discussion of Descartes's view of justifying knowledge claims and to fully appreciate the oddity and equivocal nature of Descartes's directives for verifying one's sense of pride and shame, see Garth Matthews's <u>Thought's Ego in Augustine and Descartes</u> (1992), in particular "Descartes's Internalism" pp. 125-140. Further, it cannot be offered in Descartes's defense that <u>The Passions of the Soul</u> was an early work, containing views he would be inclined to revise; it was his last book. Nor is it much comfort that he originally intended the work to be primarily for the edification of Princess Elizabeth of Bohemia, with the inference Descartes believed appearances are uniquely important for those in noble positions. It is unlikely he would be condescending to her (by advocating style over substance), for in a letter to a contemporary he explicitly ascribed to Elizabeth "extraordinary" mental powers (see CSM, v1, pp. 325-7).

> And yet a majority vote is worthless as a proof of truths that are at all difficult to discover; for a single man is much more likely to hit upon them than a group of people (Pt. 2, p. 119).

From Rules for the Direction of the Mind Descartes even rejects allowing us to rely on a majority of ancient scholars.

> We ought to read the writings of the ancients...But at the same time there is considerable danger...even if all the writers were sincere and open...we would always be uncertain which of them to believe, for hardly anything is said by one writer the contrary of which is not asserted by some other. It would be no use to count heads, so as to follow the view which many authorities hold. For if the question at issue is a difficult one, it is more likely that few, rather than many, should have been able to discover the truth about it (p.13).

As with Hobbes, in Descartes's philosophy, the grounds for pride have a public and quantitative feature. It is only when others recognize some good in us that we are entitled to experience pride. Presumably, the greater number of witnesses, the more confident one can become.

There is a parallel passage from Aristotle that also displays an asymmetry regarding the appropriate audiences for pride and shame. With shame, appearances seem to play an essential role. Whereas common opinion is disdainfully ignored in assessing honorable activities, the court of common opinion must be weighed in what may appear to be shameful.

> For the sense of disgrace...is consequent on bad actions for such actions should not be done; and if some actions are disgraceful in very truth and others only according to common opinion, this makes no difference; for neither class of actions should be done, so that no disgrace should be felt (1128b21-25).

There is a further and troubling implication in Aristotle. Shame, we are told, is "more like a passion than a state of character" (1128b10). Pride, on the other hand, can be properly defined through an investigation of a "state of character or the man characterized by it" (1123b30). Whereas pride implies a settled disposition, shame seems relegated to a feeling of disrepute. This introduces a puzzle that will require attention. These various views might suggest pride and shame are not contraries; the former being a virtue, the latter a mere feeling or physiological reaction.

David Hume, for instance, suggests pride's contrary to be humility, for he writes, "it is impossible a man can at the same time be both proud and humble" (Cited in Isenberg, 1980, p. 362) and "everything related to us, which produces pleasure or pain, produces likewise pride or humility" (Cited in Taylor, 1985, p. 20). These comments suggest two things. First, each emotion signifies the acceptance of a position on a scale. The humble man accepts a relatively low position correctly assessing his capabilities, accomplishments, and his respective merit as rather meager. The proud person, by contrast, assesses herself highly. This interpretation accords well with the definition of humiliation. Humility offers immunity to humiliation, but it is not immediately evident what implications this holds for shame. For example, if an agent incorrectly were to rank herself too highly and to present herself as such, there is little trouble picturing an audience gathering the necessary evidence to deflate her presumptuousness. In their humiliation of her is the assumption that she ought to have been more humble, not the implication that she has been shameless. And, if the audience's view is correct, and she comes to see it as such, her new status requires not that she necessarily reform shameful conduct, but that she make the necessary adjustments to both her self-assessment and to her self-presentation.

Although it will do little to sort out the puzzle with shame, it is relatively easy to discount Hume's contention that pride and humility are contraries. One way is to recognize the possibility, and indeed a rather commonplace occurrence, of agents who take pride in their humility. A person can take pride in the absence of self-preoccupation or in the lack of an exaggerated sense of importance as well as in their correct beliefs concerning their status. Arguing against Hume's notion of humility, Arnold Isenberg suggests this.

> Humility consists in knowing one's limitations as pride consists in knowing one's merits...the knowledge of both is comprehended in the act of knowing one's place...(Therefore) Humility is not the opposite but the compliment of pride (1980, pp. 361-2).

Here humility tempers pride from the excesses of vanity, conceit or arrogance.

Secondly, being virtuously humble in a Christian sense need not be a form of deferential meekness, but more an acknowledgment, as Isenberg states, of one's limitations and capabilities. Deferential meekness, as Aristotle suggests, is to be unduly humble. But in an attempt to comprehend (and in contrast with) God's perfection, even our best efforts can be viewed, in the words of Malcolm Muggeridge, as "utterly inadequate" (Buckley, 1980, p. 14). His point seems to be that one can be proud of building a beautiful house while at the same time humbled by contrasting that house with a European cathedral. And we can further fine-tune our perspective on our house by imagining the proud architects of the cathedral humbled (and inspired) speculating upon the magnificence of God's work.

A second point in Hume's remarks establishes a condition of relatedness or "closeness" with the object that elicits pride. Taylor illustrates this condition with an example of a beautiful house. I can take joy or pleasure in looking at any beautiful house, but I can only take pride in a house that is in

some way is connected to me, as in "My beautiful house", or "My family's beautiful house". A house, or anything that elicits pride, in addition to having some direct connection with the agent, must also be seen, in some respect, as desirable or valuable. Here it is not the value of the house, but the connection of the house with the agent that is of value.

Hume's additional requirements on pride are that the agreeable object be "comparatively rare, fairly constant, and discernible to others as well as to the agent himself" (Taylor, 1985, p. 21) For a quality or possession to be 'rare' implies that it exceeds some standard. These standards, Taylor calls, the "norm of expectations". Following Hume, Taylor's norm of expectations are established by 1) what a person can expect from external circumstances; 2) by his view of his own abilities and limitations, what he can or cannot achieve; and, 3) by the agent's view of the expectations of others, by what in his view society expects or can expect from him (1985, p. 40). As Aristotle has said, exceeding these norms is rare; it therefore gives one reason to be proud. In interpreting this same view from Hume, Taylor explains:

> It is...that what a person is proud of goes beyond that person's norm of expectations, and in whatever way she sees it as exceeding what she thinks she can expect, she will see it as an achievement of hers (1985, p. 40).

The condition of "discernible to others" is explicitly rejected by Isenberg in his article, "Natural Pride and Natural Shame". There he defines pride as "1) a quality which 2) is approved (or considered desirable) and 3) is judged to belong to oneself" (1980, p. 357). Arguing that we are proud of something which we value regardless of approval or disapproval from society, Isenberg rejects the idea that the object of pride must be recognized with approval by others. He illustrates his point by suggesting that the general public may be

incapable of evaluating the attributes that justify pride for an artist or a scientist, individuals who "demand applause on their own strict terms" (p. 356). It is by their own lights that these specialists must ultimately assess their accomplishments.[11] Citing this position by Isenberg, Taylor claims that we naturally hope for the approval of others, but it is a mistake to suggest we can be proud of something only on the condition others recognize and approve of that quality (1985, pp. 25-6).

> The restriction is not that she cannot be proud of this or that because others do not see its value...it is that the person must think her view of what is valuable in the situation is one that can at least in principle be shared by others. And this limitation is implied by the condition that a person is to be proud of something she must believe it to be of value" (1985, p. 27).

Isenberg's definition has a feature of self-sufficiency not found in Aristotle, but there are some counter-examples that suggest it is, at the very least, unenlightening. To suggest that - pride is a desirable quality that belongs to me - fails to distinguish, or pinpoint, my attitude toward how that quality reflects on my status. My attitude toward that desirable quality may cause me to become arrogant, conceited, or both; and technically, these are not instances of pride in the sense of a virtuous self-regarding emotion. Clearly, arrogance - a vice - cannot qualify as "the crown" of the virtues. Conversely, not every desirable quality of mine is reason to feel proud. Isenberg claims, "there is no quality deemed desirable the possession of which cannot be the source of pride" (p. 356). But this seems just plain wrong. Let's say I am physically well-proportioned, free of major deformities, and

[11] The case of the artist (or the scientist) can be used to illustrate how the cognitive components of humiliation and anger work. If the above analyses are correct, we can imagine an audience, incapable of assessing the true merit of the artist, believing her to be pretentious. The audience thinks she deserves a fall and they register that sentiment in, say, an unflattering review. But the artist will not accept the audience's evaluation, knowing what she knows, thus she will not <u>feel</u> humiliated (although she <u>has been</u> humiliated), but rather angry at what she perceives to be an unjustified slight.

moderately handsome. In short, blessed with some desirable qualities. This strikes me as an occasion to feel fortunate, not proud. There is nothing exceptional about these desirable qualities; they are quite ordinary. They do not exceed the norm of expectations nor have they come about through any effort or achievement of mine so they cannot constitute any special merit. In my case these qualities neither exceed a standard nor do they elevate my status. In another example we might imagine I have been blessed with exceptional intelligence. But if I were to waste away my life in one mundane pursuit after another isolated from and contemptuous of others, there seems to be no valid justification to take pride in the quality of my intellect. No good works result from this desirable quality.

These examples seem to suggest Isenberg's definition is too permissive. So a satisfactory definition of pride ought to include: 1) restrictions on excess, 2) stipulations on the employment of one's desirable qualities, and 3) some requirements on the quality that it is some fashion earned ot the result of effort.

Selected from the above views, the necessary conditions for pride seems to be as follows. For a person to feel proud he must believe that he is connected to some thing or quality that is in some respect desirable or valuable. He must believe that he is at least partially responsible for bringing that desirable quality about. That quality either maintains high standards or will exceed one's "norm of expectations". That quality or feature is discernible to others in the sense of being demonstrable. When it is demonstrated, recognition must come from appropriate referees. The appropriate response to recognition is a moderate self-satisfaction with the desire to maintain one's honorable position.

We might define pride as:

X is pride = df. X is moderate self-satisfaction justified by the correct, evaluative belief that by virtue of a desirable, personal quality an agent has maintained or elevated his status by demonstrably exceeding an expectation.

The elements of the emotion of pride seem would then be: the cognition that one's status has been elevated by an activity that exceeds an expectation, the pleasurable affect that one's status has been elevated, and the desire to maintain standards and to be recognized as honorable because of such activity.

For Aristotle, the quality of one's character is the proper grounds for pride; only the virtuous merit favorable self-regarding attitudes. Immanuel Kant introduced a completely different consideration. With the notion of autonomy, Kant suggests all persons are entitled to respect. - regardless of social position or conventions, and irrespective of character or merit. And the component of desire to maintain standards may foreshadow a resolution to the puzzle of pride as a virtue / shame as a feeling. It might be that pride entails a 'sense of shame': the cognition that certain conduct should be avoided (e.g., conduct that violates standards). This introduces the notion of self-respect. It might be that a person maintains his or her self-respect by virtue of having and maintaining certain standards. This would then supply a justification for feeling proud. Let us review self-respect next.

Self-Respect

Respect is an emotion that can be interpreted from a variety of vantage points. Depending on one's area of interest one might attempt to understand

respect as it is grounded in the intrinsic value of personhood, or in the context of rights and duties, or as it is appraised or distributed according to social position, virtue, a person's integrity, or achievements. Of all the emotions of self-assessment, self-respect shares a particularly intimate relation to shame; Rawls, in fact, defines shame as an injury to one's self-respect (1971, pg. 442).

In this section an attempt will be made to define self-respect so as to distinguish it from self-esteem as well as to help explicate the notion of moral shame.

It has been proposed that self-esteem is predominately a subjective appraisal; esteem implies that an evaluator estimates and attributes value to an object. With self-esteem people regard themselves favorably or unfavorably. On the basis of these beliefs, feelings will range from high to low.

Respect, on the other hand, implies a multi-faceted phenomenon involving evaluation, standards, activities, and responses to others. To respect something, in one sense, presupposes evaluation. Having determined some thing, X, to be important and/or good, X thereby merits due consideration and commands appropriate treatment. We might say the worth of X requires a respectful response. To propose a person deserves respect essentially suggests one of two possible evaluative considerations.

First, we may believe all people have intrinsic value. By virtue of their intrinsic value, a quality that is good in and of itself, people merit due consideration. The position of inherent value in all people was, most notably, introduced by Kant although this notion is central to many religious traditions and doctrines as well as presupposed in ancient philosophies.

Second, a person "merits" respect, or is entitled to be self-respecting, by virtue of the content of his character, the quality of his conduct, the

assessment of his abilities, and, possibly, by the loftiness of his aspirations. Unlike the inalienable and invariant dignity grounded in the intrinsic value of personhood, merit requires individual calculations. Here the respect that is merited may vary according to such things as talent, effort, achievement, or virtue. This may suggest, unlike self-esteem, that respect is necessarily connected to activity.

The sense of "properly valuing" certain attributes and accomplishments significantly complicates this second sense of respect; if self-respect is a subjective, relative emotion, to value some attribute objectively may be an incoherent notion. Let us consider both these evaluative approaches - intrinsic value and merit - and several views that propose the suitable candidates to weigh in our calculations.

One of the most complex theories of respect is formulated by Immanuel Kant in the Groundwork to the Metaphysics of Morals. An enormous amount of critical commentary has been devoted to understanding Kant's view of respect. It has been justifiably criticized for, among other things, being: obscure, open to counter examples, and lacking in persuasive arguments to support several fundamental claims (Feldman, 1976); neglectful of the significance and interplay of all other emotions (Oakley, 1992); an indefensibly restricted view of morally worthy actions (Schiller, 1949). Kant's theory does however contain such suggestive and intuitively plausible insights about respect that most subsequent theories acknowledge his general contributions.

Kant claims the attribute that makes one a person - a bearer of intrinsic value - is the rational ability to prescribe moral laws for oneself and to abide by them (1964, pg. 107). This capacity Kant calls 'autonomy'. "Autonomy is...the ground of the dignity of human nature and of every rational nature" (pg. 103). The Kantian prohibition to never treat people

merely as means expresses the view that - regardless of character, conduct, social status or native endowments - people, as such, must be respected. On the basis of a rational, autonomous capacity for moral goodness, people are worthy of respectful treatment since rational nature, in and of itself, is dignified (p. 96). Kant's theory follows the logic: reason, and beings who possess reason, have moral value; to have moral value is to have a dignified status; and, the obligatory response to bearers of dignified status is respectful treatment.

Stephen L. Darwall, in "Two Kinds of Respect" characterizes this Kantian notion as "recognition respect" or giving appropriate consideration to some feature of an object and deliberating about the proper response due that object. For Darwall, institutions such as the church, the courts, or marriage, in addition to persons, are entitled to recognition respect (1992).

For a person to have recognition self-respect, in Kantian terms, is for him to 1) recognize his person to entail rationality; 2) to evaluate that characteristic as important; and, 3) to be disposed to treat himself appropriately. Inappropriate treatment or disrespect, on the recognition concept, would be instances where we denigrate ourselves - performing acts the degrade or disavow our dignity. Kant lists duties to oneself to prohibit: committing suicide, making false promises, allowing one's talents to remain undeveloped, and ignoring others in distress (1964, pp. 96-98). As to other persons, Darwell concurs with Kant; recognition respect entails the moral obligation to behave toward others in appropriate ways. In dealing with others, Darwall acknowledges recognition respect restricts our conduct.

> Recognition respect for someone as a person is to give appropriate weight to the fact that he or she is a person by being willing to constrain one's behavior in ways required by that fact. Thus, it is to recognition respect for persons that Kant refers

when he writes, 'Such a being is thus an object of respect and, so far, restricts all (arbitrary) choice'" (1995, p. 191).

Presumably, it is in the sense of recognition respect that we are to understand such claims of democracy and biblical prescriptions as "All men were created equal. They are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights..." and "Love your neighbor as yourself" (John 13:34) The inability of some to recognize the inherent dignity of people of color - and our duty towards them - is what prompted Martin Luther King, Jr. to portray non-violent opposition as "a means to awaken a sense of shame within the oppressor" (King, 1986, pg. 12). Citing this Kantian imperative, King believed subjugation (roughly understood as justifying the restriction of basic human rights to some individuals or groups) to appeal to a misconception that is itself - and results in - shameful behavior.[12]

Before Kant, Descartes similarly proposed: "I see only one thing in us which could give us good reason for esteeming ourselves, namely, the exercise of our free will and the control we have over our volitions (1985, sec 152, pg. 384). Descartes's view of the importance of the capacity of free will - the "freedom to dispose his volitions" - parallels features of Kant's "autonomy".

Descartes's "control of our volitions" (p. 384) mirrors the Kantian version of self-respect he terms 'pride'. As we saw, autonomy, for Kant, is a capacity the possession of which entitles the bearer a dignified status. In that autonomy is a capacity, it may or may not issue into morally good action. How that capacity is utilized introduces two other senses of self-respect found in Kant: reverence for oneself and noble pride. Reverence for oneself recognizes autonomy's potential; it is the motivational, subjective feeling a person has as a free agent. It is "the assessment of a worth which far outweighs all the worth of what is commended by inclination" or self-interest

[12] See "The Ethical Demands of Integration", (King, 1986, pp. 117-125).

(1964, p. 71). "The dignity of man consists precisely in his capacity to make universal law, although only on the condition of being himself also subject to the law he makes" (pg. 107, underlining added).

The evaluative form of self-respect is pride, or the level of self-respect we merit on the basis of our specific actions or how autonomy is utilized. Abiding by the commands of one's universalized prescriptions justifies prideful feelings. A Kantian reverence for oneself seems to imply certain behavior, as in a slavish reliance on alcohol or an intentional verbal deception is beneath a self-respecting person. 'To have one's pride' prohibits such behavior.

Respect, then, in Kant's philosophy, is a complex phenomena. It entails the recognition of an objective intrinsic value (autonomy), an obligation to recognize the appropriate constraints upon our behavior (duty), a subjective, motivational feeling to perform morally good acts and to avoid evil (reverence), and an evaluative reflection for having performed good acts (pride). It is in this last sense of self-respect that issues in the concept of individual appraisals.

On Darwall's account, recognition respect involves the idea "this is important". Like Kant's 'autonomy', with Darwall the inherent dignity of personhood is grounds for this kind of self-respect. In order to accommodate the type of self-respect that issues from how one's autonomy is utilized, Darwall distinguishes two forms of appraisal respect: 1) an attitude toward a person as a moral agent, and, 2) an attitude toward a person engaged in some pursuit (1995). Therefore, the appropriate grounds for appraisal is either the person's character or their displayed excellence in a pursuit or profession.

The first form of appraisal respect can be illustrated by the simple example of promise-keeping. Other things being equal, both X and Y have the same (autonomous) capacity for keeping their promises. Different evaluations are grounded in their specific conduct. Therefore, I will appraise X as

trustworthy and Y to be untrustworthy by virtue of their keeping and failing to keep their promises respectively. These particular evaluations then factor into the general, overall appraisal.

The second form of appraisal respect is the evaluation of an individual within a particular pursuit or vocation. Here we might propose a profession entails objective standards of excellence: a "code of ethics". For example, we will appraise a surgeon highly if she correctly and consistently diagnoses her patient's illnesses and performs the required surgery successfully. We tend to prefer, in the process, that she do so in a compassionate and timely manner and that she recognize the dignity of her patients.

The idea in appraisal respect is "This is good" and the appraisal of a person as a moral agent introduces, in a broad and preliminary way, the notion of character. Character implies those habits and tendencies of a person that require development. Habits and tendencies imply predictability. As Joel Kupperman points out, "To have no character...is to be morally unreliable, a state not as bad as being wicked. The wicked can be relied on in a negative way" (1991, p. 7). Obviously, then, a person can have a "strong" character that is wicked. To have 'no character' suggests a person without direction, aims or convictions. Conversely, we can say that when a person's habits and tendencies are morally virtuous, we tend to ascribe to him a 'good character'. To have a good character suggests not only the presence of virtues and the absence of major vices, but that others can rely on a person of good character to act accordingly (Kupperman 1991). This also suggests how we can understand a person acting "out of character". We react with startled amazement and disappointment when lied to by a person of good character.

Habits and tendencies also imply activity. To have a good and strong character is to be committed to moral conduct (Kupperman, 1991).

Commitment implies having "a settled constellation of aims and ideals" (Deigh, 1995, p. 137).

But where it was suggested that self-esteem can take the form of a favorable self-assessment justified by projecting on what one intends to accomplish, self-respect might be distinguishable by requiring activity. This distinction would pose problems for a Rawlsian analysis of self-respect since he equates it with self-esteem. This difficulty occupies the interest of Martha Craven Nussbaum in "Shame, Separateness, and Political Unity: Aristotle's Criticism of Plato". In a discussion of Rawls's view of self-respect Nussbaum creates several scenarios designed to highlight potential difficulties for Rawls. One of her examples is essentially this: S is dissatisfied with her life. She is not exercising her excellences. External circumstance conspires to frustrate her efforts. Other times she is downright lazy. After a few sessions of "some fashionable kind of therapy", she is now quite content (1980, p. 398). Nussbaum wonders: Has the treatment given S self-respect?

It would appear we could answer in the positive only if we acknowledged S has adjusted her aims, ideals, and her life-plan as well as her assessment of her capabilities. This seems implausible, but I see no difficulty in assuming S, after therapy, may now view herself more favorably. Psychologists Rogers and McKay claim these revised self-assessments constitute successful therapy; they propose, moreover, it is therapy's primary objective.

Nussbaum objects to the implication in Rawls that "if you *feel* your life plan to be a worthy on and *feel* confident that you can carry it out, that appears sufficient to make you a person of self-respect" (p. 398). Nussbaum contends that the objective value of pursuits and the true beliefs ought to distinguish a genuine self-respect from mere feelings of respect (p. 399).

> We do not think that my reducing my expectations and/or becoming placid about failure to achieve my aims will necessarily be a route to real self-respect...(W)e do not think that the solution to all problems of shame lies in the effacement of the uncomfortable feelings; we think it makes a difference pertinent to judgments of self-respect whether I solve my problems...(not) simply learning not to care (1980, p. 400).

According to Nussbaum, appraisal self-respect implies correct evaluations of objectively good activities.

The differences between the forms of respect can now be distinguished as follows: recognition respect is the acknowledgment of the inalienable and invariant value of people as such and the awareness that our actions are, therefore, restricted in certain ways. Appraisal respect acknowledges individual merit according to 1) the particular deeds and character of individuals, or 2) a person's expertise within a particular pursuit. This explanation seems to resolve the puzzle of how all people are entitled to respect, under one description, while at the same time one individual is entitled to more respect than another.

There is also a form of self-respect in the sense of maintaining standards that one has set for oneself. Like Darwall, Elizabeth Telfer, in "Self-Respect", divides self-respect into two distinct kinds. For Tefler, an 'estimative' self-respect is a favorable opinion of oneself. In her view, conduct and character constitute the grounds for a favorable estimation, the self-regarding belief that a person attains some minimum standard "with an appropriate emotional accompaniment (of the)...admiration of others (1992, p. 107). Estimative self-respect speaks to the proposition "This is good" and it coincides with Darwall's appraisal respect, the Rawlsian notion of "sense of worth", and the subjective accounts of psychologists expressed as personal judgments of worthiness (e.g., Branden, Coopersmith).

Tefler suggests that if estimative self-respect were all there was to the emotion, it is unclear how we can attribute motivation or a desire to behave in a worthy manner (1995). For her, "It is not clear how a belief that one is already in some way satisfactory can be invoked as an explanation of satisfactory behavior" (p. 108). And this is precisely one point on which the subjectivist self-esteem advocates have been open to criticism. Fault found with the report from the California Task Force on Self-Esteem includes their dismissive references to achievement, competition, and success and their reliance on personal attitudes (Leo, 1990). Critics wonder, "If children feel as though they are perfect the way they are, what is there to strive for?" [13]

Tefler's second type, a "conative" self-respect addresses this apparent omission. It is defined as "a desire not to behave in a manner unworthy of oneself, or a disposition which prevents one from behaving in a manner unworthy of oneself" (1995, p. 109). This type entails a motivational component to abide by standards of worthiness and "to shun unworthy behavior" (p. 110). Conative self-respect parallels recognition self-respect, the realization that an important status entails obligations of appropriate conduct. It seeks to acknowledge the "This is important" component.

In a review of Tefler's view, Dillion interprets Tefler to suggest these obligatory standards can be subjective or objective. "The standards include both objective ones, some of which are dictated by the moral significance of autonomous agency, and subjective ones, which one sets for oneself or are provided by one's goals, projects, and roles" (p. 26).

Tefler explicitly lists three objective, personal qualities that she claims have universal moral significance.

---

[13] See, for example, Leo. "The trouble with self-esteem". U. S. News & World Report. April 2, 1990.

> When we say that someone has self-respect, we are attributing to him qualities of independence, tenacity and self-control. A man cannot have conative self-respect if he does not have these; whether he himself values them or not is immaterial...this will involve meeting standards, attaining goals, fulfilling roles which he has set for himself. On the other hand, the fulfillment of some role is to be tested by an objective standard, even if the choice of role is a personal one (p. 112, underlining added).

So Tefler's position seems to claim that by virtue of personhood all individuals have some objective standards to recognize and that each individual, at the same time, subjectively assumes other standards by virtue of their self-chosen projects and pursuits. Further, in light of the subjective choice of projects, the individual needs to recognize the objective standards inherent in these pursuits. This might be illustrated by recalling the surgeon. She subjectively chooses the field of medicine and is objectively obligated by, among other things, the Hippocratic Oath as well as hospital regulations and policies.

Two authors, Stephen Massey and Thomas E. Hill, Jr., make similar points about self-respect. Massey, in "Is Self-Respect a Moral or Psychological Concept?", suggests the subjective view has the following criteria: 1) a person identifies with a project, an activity or a particular status as having value, 2) this project provides a standard of behavior; 3) a self-respecting person believes that he or she acts in accordance with these standards; and, 4) he or she intends to continue to act in an appropriate manner (1995). Satisfying these criteria entitles a person to have a favorable attitude (estimative) toward him or herself.

On this account, as Massey proposes, no reference need be made to independent or objective standards. The above criteria seem compatible with Rawls's subjective (psychological) account of "a sense of worth" for Massey

writes, "we can accept that (a person) respects herself, provided that she believes her claims" (1995, p. 202, underlining added).

An objective (moral) version of self-respect would need to introduce the qualification of an insistence upon the attitudes and actions of a person satisfying independent standards of worthiness. Massey asserts that the most frequent claim in the literature for objective standards "involves the requirement that a self-respecting person believe himself to have equal basic rights and properly value those rights" (1992, pg. 203). Much of the literature on race relations and the women's movement appeals to the Kantian notion of the equal status of all people. A common argument for the objective basis for self-respect makes reference to the concept of recognition respect prohibiting unwarranted servility (Taylor, 1985; Dillion, 1995; Hill, 1995a, 1995b; Boxill 1995). For a woman to be deferential solely on account of certain beliefs about gender, or for a black to assume a white has special entitlements or capabilities can be considered morally objectionable beliefs. If all people have intrinsic value, it becomes a duty to oneself and to others to acknowledge one's equal rights and moral equality.

Massey claims that the subjective account of self-respect "need not have any particular content nor must his actions meet any independent standards of worthiness or appropriateness" (1992, p. 202). But he seems to contradict himself when he lists as one of the four criteria of the subjective account an objective feature of 'conative' self-respect.

> Identification with a project, activity, or status provides both a standard of worthy or appropriate conduct and a desire to act in accordance with it. This desire is central to the attitude involved when we speak of self-respect, since to respect oneself is to have certain attitudes and desires, especially the desire to act in a manner that one believes is worthy of oneself, and not simply to have certain beliefs about one's worth (1992, p. 201, underlining added).

Here Massey reinforces Nussbaum's objection to the presumed value of mere psychological realignment. In Massey's psychological version of self-respect emphasis is placed on an agent's desire to behave appropriately. However, one must be careful not to overlook his clear implication that the subjectively identified project entails objective standards. It follows that for an agent's beliefs of personal worthiness to be correct, his perception of these standards must be accurate and his evaluation of his compliance must be correct.

In "Self-Respect Reconsidered", Thomas E. Hill, Jr. takes up the idea of fulfilling those roles that one has set for oneself. With it, Hill claims, there is a new sense in which a person can be self-respecting that need not appeal to the intrinsic value of persons nor to particular merit in conduct or pursuits. Hill introduces "a case of respecting someone independently of rights and merits", the idea that a person can devise standards of appropriate behavior for oneself without the Kantian requirement to "universalize" the standard (1995, p. 119). Self-respect, in this form, requires one to live by personal standards, and evaluate oneself accordingly, but not to extend any demands upon others. These will be standards below which the agent himself cannot go. These standards constitute both subjective ideals toward which an agent aspires and constitute standards for the agent's self-identification. Hill remarks, "Whether one sees them as objective or not, one genuinely takes the attitude that one is, in one's own view, better or worse according to how one measures up to them" (pp. 120-121).

The implication of the comments by Tefler, Massey, and Hill is that self-respect can rest on a comparison with standards and need not be a comparison with other people. The conceited or vain man compares himself

with others, in some cases without reference to any standards. Hill, however, introduces the notion that a self-respecting person feels an obligation to adhere to standards regardless of comparative appraisals with others. A person keeps her self-respect by maintaining her standards. It is in this sense that Taylor considers self-respect a "protective" emotion (1985, p. 80). The expectations of a person of self-respect must be those that the agent thinks are important, that are of value, and that contribute to the life she is leading. As Taylor, Tefler, and Hill suggest, some of these values may be peculiar to her life.

To summarize, many of the position papers on self-respect can be classified into those that advocate for a moral or objective account and those that propose self-respect is a psychological or subjective phenomena. Kant would seem to be a strong advocate for the objective view; self-respect, in his view, is construed as a moral duty to uphold the dignity of one's rational nature. With their emphasis on personal aspirations, psychologists Rogers, McKay, and Branden, on the other hand, suggest self-respect should be calculated by whatever the individual deems worthy. They argue imposing objective standards upon oneself is a prescription for anxiety. The objectivists counter that individuals can frequently be deluded concerning the worthiness of aspirations (as portrayed by the cases of the neo-nazi, the gang members, and the spousal abusers). Accordingly, the different accounts will logically imply different views of shame.

Both views have appeal. What seems to have been largely overlooked in the literature is that a plausible view of self-respect can blend elements from each account into a coherent whole. Rather than concentrate on points of disagreement, a compromise might be reached. One can find encouragement for this approach by the fact that the two views need not be mutually

exclusive. A further benefit of a successful blend of these two notions is that it will afford us a greater precision in an analysis of shame.

The blend of the two views is suggested in a comment by Aristotle.

> Pursuit and avoidance in the sphere of desire (appetition) correspond exactly to affirmation and negation in the sphere of intellect; so that, since moral virtue is a state involving choice, and choice is deliberate desire, it follows that if a choice is to be a good one, both the reasoning must be true and the desire right; and the desire must pursue the same things that the reasoning asserts (1139a20-26).

Earlier in the Ethics, Aristotle proclaims "Our characters are determined by our choice of what is good or evil..."(1112a3). And since character is, for Aristotle, the grounds for one's self-respect, his analysis incorporates: 1) conduct 2) motivated by the desire of a proper object 3) correctly appraised. For S to respect her character, she must have confidence that she has her aims right, that she can discern right from wrong, and that she has the tenacity and strength of will to pursue the right. But this account does not eliminate from consideration that the aims can be subjectively chosen. For a person to truly respect oneself there would seem to have to be the consideration of an autonomously directed life. One feature of servility that characterizes it as an objectionable state is that aims or aspirations are restricted or imposed upon an agent. That agent must conform to an alien standard, one not self-chosen.

This suggests that we need not offer two definitions of self-respect, one that recognizes intrinsic value (conative) and another that accommodates individual appraisals (estimative). A satisfactory definition could incorporate the objective features of due regard for human dignity, proper aspirations, and conduct together with autonomously chosen goals and the fulfillment of personal ideals. From the psychological account, autonomy is recognized and

ideals are relative to one's beliefs and calibrated, as Rawls suggests, to the individual's talents and inclinations. From the moral account, the desires, beliefs, and aims are verified to be directed at proper objects and connected to reality. The objects are neither the result of muddled reasoning or values nor are they indecent. Self-respect thus cannot degenerate into mere attitude nor can it dismiss objective moral standards or tolerate affronts to human dignity. As Aristotle insists, reason and desire pursue the same object. One reason for remorse is that an agent desires and pursues that which he knows to be an affront to human dignity. The agent is cognizant that he desires an object that is incompatible with reason and one that detracts from the goal of living a flourishing life.

If we were to concede these points, we might formulate a definition of self respect to be:

X is self-respect = df. X is a self-regarding evaluative appraisal that calculates an agent's autonomy, aspirations, and conduct.

A blow to one's self-respect is a serious matter. It is more than the embarrassment over a stalled car, or the humiliation of realizing the days of being sexually provocative to undergraduates have long since past. Neither is it agent-regret, a sadness over how things might have been, nor even remorse, a resignation that one could and should have acted differently. The discussion of self-respect foreshadows several opportunities for an understanding of shameful behavior that mandates a reassessment of self-respect. Some candidates might include: treating people inappropriately, acting contrary to one's convictions, giving in to temptations, misconceptions of one's worthiness, or the disorganization of aims and ideals. Let us now turn to shame and see if these candidates can be explained and supported.

Shame

What soon becomes apparent in a review of the literature on shame is the extent of the disagreements over precisely what it is and what significance it might have. At the same time, there is substantial agreement on some of shame's specific features. Virtually all commentators agree that shame is a painful feeling that impacts upon one's self-assessment. A sense of diminishment, which is never pleasant, is an integral component of the shame experience. As with other self-regarding emotions, the subject and the object of shame is the agent. No author that I am aware of disputes the basic observation by John Kekes that "it is a bad, unpleasant, painful, disturbing feeling, for it involves regarding ourselves in an unfavorable light" (1993, p. 143).

Commentators further agree that shame shares a connection with guilt, self-respect and self-esteem. On account of a failure or a transgression one feels diminished and a sense of diminishment requires a reassessment. The attitude held prior to a shame experience is supplanted by a less favorable one. And it is undisputed that some notion of an audience is involved; the desire to hide, flee, or cover-up is universally recognized. As with humiliation, in shame we are seen in a new light and we are sometimes startled by the unfavorable evaluation; the admonishment "Aren't you ashamed of yourself" frequently alerts us to internal and external aspects of our thought and behavior to which we have paid too little attention.

Lastly, although many people believe that to be ashamed is, in varying degrees, a bad thing, I have been unable to locate a single source that proposes to be shameless is, in any sense, good. Here is one clear difference

between shame and guilt. To be and to feel guiltless (innocent) is a good state of affairs. From the prior discussion of self-respect we can propose that to be and to feel shameless, is to be, minimally, a person who is without aims, ideals, and standards of appropriate behavior.

Given all this, there are still far more points of disagreement. One writer believes shame can be classified into natural and moral categories (Rawls, 1971) while another proposes that shame in all its forms has moral implications. Since it impacts directly on our attempt to lead good lives, every shame experience has a moral dimension (Kekes, 1988, 1993, 1995). Some believe shame to be a passive emotion (Urmson, 1980), others active (Deigh, 1995). Plato is widely understood to believe a sense of shame is a positive thing; it is a beneficial emotion that acts as a constraint on immoral behavior. On several points, one author interprets Aristotle to agree with Plato (Nussbaum, 1980). Others do not share this view. J. O. Urmson interprets Aristotle's position to be one of neutrality (1980) and John Kekes offers persuasive evidence to suggest Aristotle holds a negative attitude toward shame (1988, 1993). The apparent conflict between Plato and Aristotle and the variety of interpretations of Aristotle's position are representative of disagreements that exist today. Current disagreements are fueled by the suggestive remarks of these ancient philosophers.

In several dialogues Plato suggests shame is an important safeguard; it restrains immoral behavior. In the Republic, shame is referred to as a guardian that constrains young men from dishonoring their elders (Bk. 5, 465b, p. 704).

In the Laws, Plato warns against disregarding wise legislation. When one does, it is analogous to:

> the souls of drinkers...(which) become more juvenile...(thereby losing the) fear which has received the name of modesty and the sense of shame" (671d, p. 1268).

Again in the Republic, Plato suggests that to fall asleep with the parts of one's soul at war with each other is to invite dreams that are lawless and shameful.

> Of our unnecessary pleasures and appetites ...that are awakened in sleep when the rest of the soul, the rational, gentle and dominant part, slumbers,...endeavors to sally forth and satisfy its own instincts. You are aware that in such there is nothing it will not venture to undertake as being released from all sense of shame and all reason...It is ready for any foul deed...and, in a word, falls short of no extreme of folly and shamelessness (Republic, Bk. IX, 571cd, p. 798).

Aristotle is characteristically less poetic. In the Nicomachean Ethics he refers to shame as "a sort of fear of disrepute" (1128b12). This statement is obscure. It is unclear which attitude has prominence, the fear that one appears dishonorable or the belief, irrespective of appearances, that one has acted, or is capable of acting, dishonorably. Fear, in the Rhetoric, is defined as,

> a pain or disturbance due to a mental picture of some destructive or painful evil in the future...fear is caused by whatever we feel has great power of destroying us, or of harming us in ways that tend to cause us great pain (1382a20-30).

Shame, then, as a fear of a destructive evil, might be interpreted as a cognitive and an affective response to a breach of integrity. Aristotle might mean that an agent has failed to maintain a standard that he views as important, a standard that contributes to his self-definition. But his account of shame in the Rhetoric does not make clear what role the public recognition of an agent's disgraceful conduct serves.

> Shame may be defined as pain or disturbance in regard to bad things, whether present, past, or future, which seem likely to involve us in discredit; and shamelessness as contempt or indifference in regard to these same bad things....We feel shame at such bad things as we think are disgraceful to ourselves or to those we care for (1383b15-19).

What remains unclear from these comments is whether a person ought to be motivated to avoid disgraceful conduct by the fear of punishment, as in the loss of reputation, or by an aversion to vice. These motivations have been roughly categorized as external and internal considerations respectively.

Three influential notions about shame, that in some circles enjoy the status of received wisdom, are that shame is an external (Lynd, 1958), primitive (Erikson, 1950), and unproductive (Isenberg, 1980) emotion. In what follows I intend to support the claim that these last three views are all false. The conclusions drawn from the arguments that shame can be an internal, a complex, and a productive emotion will serve as an answer to the first research question: "What is the emotion of moral shame?"

The procedure used to arrive at an answer to this question will be organized as follows: 1. a discussion of the internal / external debate (which is generally framed as the distinction between guilt and shame); 2. a review of the various claims about the necessity of an audience in order to experience shame; 3. a discussion of strengths and weaknesses in John Rawls's important distinction of natural and moral kinds of shame; 4. a review of some of the most plausible and influential writings on the alleged significance or insignificance of shame; and, 5. a proposal of the proper components of shame. Next, from all of the above, I will propose a preliminary definition. Finally, following the definition, this section will conclude with a proposal on how moral shame relates to the other self-regarding emotions that have been

previously discussed. Let us begin with the proposition that shame is an external emotion.

The Shame as External, Guilt as Internal Argument

A common assertion among some psychologists and philosophers is that shame is a social emotion. By social emotion, they mean shame requires an audience or that shame is an exclusively external phenomenon. Whereas Aristotle seems to imply shame depends upon some sort of public recognition, Descartes is explicit. "Pride", writes Descartes, results "from the belief or hope we have of being praised by certain other persons" (CSM, 1984, Sec. 204, p. 402). Similarly, shame is "a kind of sadness...which proceeds from the expectation or fear of being blamed" (Sec. 205, p. 402). As noted above, Descartes distinguishes pride from self-satisfaction by virtue of the former emotion depending on "the opinion others may have of" a good quality of an agent (Sec. 66, p. 352).

To explain shame's social dimension, many authors contrast it with the proposed internal operations they attribute to guilt. As with Descartes, in Helen Merrell Lynd's On Shame and the Search for Identity, the external quality to shame is equally explicit. Lynd claims guilt is based "on the internalization of values" whereas shame depends on disapproval from others (1958, p. 21). Anthropologist Ruth Benedict agrees that shame is a reaction to criticism from others, and to be "a more external experience" than guilt (1958, p. 21).

Many current theories of shame seem to have evolved from these views as well as from the influential writings and research of Erik Erikson. In Childhood and Society, Erikson postulated the psychosocial development of

people follows eight stages; shame, the second stage, precedes guilt (1950). Erikson's concept of shame is restricted to preadolescence (15 months to three years) and his view has been far-reaching in the internal / external debate.

Quoting from Erikson frequently, the popular work of John Bradshaw has introduced the concept of shame to a wide audience. Bradshaw accepts the Eriksonian notion that shame emerges prior to guilt. In the popular Healing the Shame That Binds You, Bradshaw agrees with Lynd's assertion that guilt presupposes an internal value system.

> Healthy guilt...results from behaving in a manner contrary to our beliefs and values. Guilt presupposes internalized rules and develops later than shame...Guilt is developmentally more mature than shame. Guilt does not reflect directly upon one's identity or diminish one's sense of personal worth. It flows from an integrated set of values (Bradshaw, 1988, p. 17).

Bradshaw refers to the research of Fossum and Mason and their text, Facing Shame, as support for his position. From that book, Bradshaw cites:

> The guilty person might say 'I feel sorry about the consequences of my behaviors'. In doing so the person's values are reaffirmed. The possibility of repair exists and learning and growth are promoted...The possibility for repair seems foreclosed to the shameful person because shame is a matter of identity...not of behavioral infraction. There is nothing learned from it and no growth is opened by the experience because it only confirms one's negative feelings about oneself (Cited in Bradshaw, p. 17).

The ideas that shame impacts upon one's identity, that growth is not promoted, and repair is not possible evolve in Bradshaw's theory to regard shame as "the belief we are flawed and defective persons" (1988, p. 195). "Toxic shame is no longer an emotion that signals our limits, it is a state of

being, a core identity" (p. 10). By contrast, Bradshaw recognizes a "healthy shame" as a recognition of limits and fallibility, a "metaphysical boundary" (p. 4).

So Bradshaw portrays shame as a global self-assessment and for one to feel ashamed is to make this assessment that one is a defective and irreparable individual. Shame, he claims, cannot connect with "an integrated sense of values". None of these propositions seem correct.

Bradshaw does not make clear what classifies the recognition of limits to be shame as opposed to humility. One would expect him to do so, for there need not be a failure, a transgression, or a specific moral wrong in an accurate assessment of one's capabilities. To define healthy shame as "a recognition of limits" is simply a mistake. Consider this counter argument. A person, S, is a genius. She is well aware that she possesses extraordinary intellectual and artistic powers and energy. Her scientific research and publications receive superlative reviews and her oil paintings hang in the finest galleries. S recognizes, however, that she can rarely write more than one scientific text and complete more than two paintings in the course of one year. She recognizes this limitation. So, knowing her annual limitations, S contracts for only those projects that she can honor at her level of excellence. I see no reason to categorize this as an occasion for shame nor is it clear how Bradshaw would meet this objection.

"Toxic shame", Bradshaw writes, "gives you a sense of worthlessness, a sense of failing and falling short as a human being" (p. 10). Bradshaw's distinction of guilt from shame parallels what sociologists term the psychological states of primary and secondary deviance. Primary deviance applies to cases where an individual recognizes that he has committed a wrong act but that act does not affect his overall standing as an individual nor does it

contribute to his self-definition. As an example, a man steals a pair of gloves from a department store. Doing so might surprise him, for he attributes stealing to have been a momentary lapse and "out of character". Apparently the appropriate emotional response to primary deviant behavior is guilt. Making amends, in this case to the store owner, relieves the "pained feeling or regret".

Secondary deviance, on the other hand, applies to those cases where acts express one's character; the man understands the act of stealing the gloves as representative of who he is, for he thinks of himself as a burglar (Solomon, 1977). This seems to be Bradshaw's point of toxic shame. A secondary deviant identification goes to one's character. An agent believes himself to be a burglar; his global assessment or his "state of being" is considered to be irreparably defective and undesirable.

Common and succinct definitions repeatedly heard in seminars and surveys and gleaned from the work from Bradshaw express these assumptions. A frequent response to an internet survey has been: "Guilt is 'I made a mistake'. Shame is 'I am the mistake'." (Cited by Claudia Black, seminar overhead, and internet transmission, "BH", 2 Dec 1997). This idea is expanded upon in this carefully worded internet transmission.

> For me shame has always been the result of being blamed--someone telling me that something I had done was "shameful". When shame enters the picture, the message I get is that only someone inherently defective would have done such a thing. That shame can't be resolved or expiated because it stems from a "state of being". When I become aware that I have done something wrong, I feel guilt and remorse and possibly a desire to make amends (internet transmission, "NS", 30 Dec. 1997)

Here again guilt presumably applies to isolated, concrete acts, whereas shame applies to identity or a person's "global self-evaluation"

(Lewis, 1993, p. 569). A second inference from these comments is that guilt is self-imposed whereas shame must be imposed from outside; one "become(s) aware" of one's guilt (internal) whereas shame comes from "being blamed" (external). Secondly, to feel shame is alleged to imply an irreparable defect. Guilt, on the other hand, prompts remorse, atonement, and reinstatement. And guilt is assumed to be a response to a momentary glitch as in an act that is thought to be out of character. An agent is assumed to have acted contrary to his or her mature, reasoned, and internalized value system. Shame implies agents come to realize their values and aspirations are woefully mismatched with their capabilities.

Like Bradshaw, Fossum, and Mason, Hebert Morris observes in Guilt and Shame, "with guilt we are disposed to confess, with shame to hide" (1971, p. 2). Morris goes on to note that guilt is resolved by confession and making amends. "Restoration" is possible (p. 2). In shame, we are required to change. But in many popular views, change is foreclosed by the belief of a secondary deviance, an unmalleable identity. The agent is the mistake.

There are several dangers in accepting these positions uncritically. If we look at these distinctions and psychological assumptions carefully, it seems evident that they are ultimately unhelpful and seriously confused.

Restoration implies reestablishing an equilibrium or the return to an original state. The learning and growth to which Fossum and Mason refer implies improvement, so that the change to one's character that can accompany shame seems more accurately to suggest learning and growth. Reinstatement does not suggest growth; it implies repair.

Secondly, no persuasive evidence is given to support the assertion that secondary deviance entails any inherent claims about shame. A man identifies himself as a burglar simply because he sees himself as habitually

disposed to steal. That, it seems, is merely an acknowledgment that he is guilty of repeated acts of stealing. It is easy to imagine a cat burglar or a bank robber that approves of and enjoys his life of crime. Although he may not harbor any misconceptions about his criminal identity, this does not imply he is ashamed of that identity. His lack of desire (or inability) to reform might be attributed to shamelessness.

Another consideration is that if the burglar is apprehended, he will face a trial and probable conviction. In a trial evidence is submitted and weighed in an attempt to prove his guilt, not his emotional disposition about his life of crime. This scenario poses further difficulties for the internal / external proposition. A public trial and a jail sentence certainly seem to qualify as external sanctions for transgressions of laws or social conventions. And if the burglar is unrepentant, that implies he has neither an internalized value code nor is it likely that a rehabilitative conversion will take place. As happens with many criminals, he may technically "make amends" by serving his sentence, but, as criminal justice officials know all too well, this does not guarantee rehabilitation.

Fourth, just as ignorance of the law does not absolve an adult from punishment for a crime, children are occasionally admonished for certain acts that they have performed even when an adult knows the child has not considered the normative status of the act. Parents react with "You shouldn't ever do such and such" knowing full well that the child is learning something for the first time. However, the child will still feel guilty. The point is simply this: in these instances people come to feel guilty prior to the internalization of any applicable value or rule.

The most important misconception in the formulations of how we are instructed to differentiate shame from guilt involves the perspective of the

audience. In the popular psychological literature shame is commonly portrayed as an external judgment imposed on an agent. A third party witnesses our failure or shortcoming and this observation serves to crystallize our global assessment of defectiveness. But this view completely overlooks many shame experiences that are quite commonplace. One example is the shame I might feel when no one is there to observe me. In a department store I might notice a beautiful pair of gloves and "consider" stealing them. To even entertain the idea of taking someone else's property makes me feel ashamed. It is difficult to conceive of this as in any way "external" nor is it clear what, if anything, I am guilty of.

Sartre has several examples of shameful activities that are frequently referred to in the literature. A variation on one is as follows. A man is peeping through a hotel keyhole, let's say, at a woman undressing. He hears footsteps of someone descending the stairs near the woman's room. Immediately the peeping tom stands up and begins to walk away. The third person, however, continues down the stairs, never entering the hallway.

The first man avoids detection. There is no public disgrace. But, he clearly feels ashamed for he now sees himself as the person on the stairs might have - a man sneaking about in order to invade a woman's privacy. The psychological external model does not seem to be able to accommodate this shame experience.

Additional objections concern instances where an agent, S, is ashamed for failing to adhere to the supererogatory obligations she has set for herself. Merely abiding by social conventions will be insufficient to satisfy her internalized values. Illustrations of this might be S's stringent work ethic, her acts of charity and volunteer work for the less fortunate, or the kindnesses she feels morally compelled to extend to animals. Although all these acts exceed

the demands of social convention, failing to perform them may cause shame for the agent who values them as constituting the requirements of leading a good life. This shame is entirely internal. No one expects her to exceed convention nor are they aware of (and therefore do not hold her accountable to) her exceptional "internal" standards.

There is another example of standards only a person can impose upon himself. Let's assume S is a highly talented furniture maker. He makes a corner hutch from beautiful pieces of cherry and mahogany, but he is dissatisfied with the finished product. If people with his talent were to closely scrutinize the workmanship, they would notice minor defects. Although this is unlikely, this piece of furniture is not representative of S's best work. As such, he is ashamed it represents him. Gabriele Taylor refers to a craftsman to illustrate this "higher order" self-consciousness that shame can entail.

> (The craftsman) need not imagine an actual observer, and that there is such an observer need not be part of the content of his thought. All that seems necessary is that he shift his viewpoint from that of the creator of the work to that of the critical assessor, and he himself can fulfill both these functions (1985, p. 58)

All these objections and examples suggest that a comprehensive analysis of shame (as well as of guilt) will need to recognize internal and external components. The claim that shame is an emotion solely in response to external phenomena is false. But, this does not commit us to argue that shame does not require some type of observation. When S reflects upon his performance, some sort of detached or objective observation must calculate how and to what degree his standards have or have not been maintained. To consider this, let's turn to the idea of an audience

The Audience

Certain comments in Aristotle's Rhetoric seem to imply that one must be seen or have his deeds discovered by people close to him in order to feel shame. At 1384a25 he writes: "Since...we only care what opinion is held of us because of the people who form that opinion, it follows that the people before whom we feel shame are those whose opinions of us matters." Among Aristotle's list of shameful activities are cowardice, wronging people financially, illicit sexual relations, profiting from helpless people, using flattery for personal advantage, refusing to endure hardships, and boastfulness (1383b20 - 1384a20). The list of people before whom we feel shame includes family members, our elders, the well-educated, the acquaintances of our friends, and those who take us as their models, such as, students, advisees, and rivals, as well as all "those who admire us, those whom we admire, those by whom we wish to be admired (1384a27 - 1385a10). In A Theory of Justice, John Rawls makes a similar point.

> Shame implies an especially intimate connection with our person and with those upon whom we depend...(a man) feels ashamed because his conduct shows that he has failed to achieve the good of self-command, and he has been found unworthy of his associates upon whom he depends to confirm his sense of worth. He is apprehensive lest they reject him and find him contemptible (1971, pp. 443-445).

An inference that one is inclined to draw from these comments is that shame and humiliation share the common feature of a fall from a higher to a lower position by virtue of an external assessment. In humiliation, an agent is assessed by an audience to have allotted herself a position higher than that to which she is thought to be entitled. Regardless of whether the agent disputes the audience's judgment, she nevertheless feels presumptuous for

having assigned herself a rank that is not confirmed by others. As Taylor observes: "When feeling humiliated a person realizes either that her good opinion of herself is unfounded, or that her belief that she commands the good opinion of others is mistaken" (1985, p. 139). The agent thus acknowledges that she "appears" contemptible; the audience's perception is that her self-assessment is overblown. She is perceived as vain.

Shame can operate in this way. In honor groups or in a shame culture failing to meet societal demands or adhere to its code results in public disesteem. And this view would seem to accord with the psychological characterization of shame as an external experience. The audience witnesses a failure or shortcoming and the agent, therefore, comes to realize that she is not what she assumed herself to be (Taylor, 1985). So one cognitive operation in both humiliation and shame is an unfavorable self-reassessment to accommodate the audience's perception.

But shame need not be the extreme and global overview that one is, therefore, 'defective', nor must all shame experiences be predicated on public exposure. The former claim extends the psychological umbrella of "shame-based identities" to range over too many cases. The latter claim Bernard Williams calls "a silly mistake".

> The silly mistake is to suppose that the reactions of shame depend simply on being found out, that the feeling behind every decision or thought that is governed by shame is literally and immediately the fear of being seen...If everything depended on the fear of discovery, the motivations of shame would not be internalized at all (1993, p. 81).

Gabriele Taylor expands upon the concept of the audience by distinguishing two elements in each case of shame. The first is one of identification, the self-regarding adverse judgment of the agent. A shamed

person feels degraded, "not the sort of person she believed, assumed, or hoped she was or...should be" (1985, p. 64). These notions of what an agent hopes to be and what an agent believes one should be foreshadow the argument for shame's conditionally good status.

The second element - which consists of two parts - involves the agent's relation with the audience. This is the explanatory component and it shares structural similarities with humiliation. The "first point of view" audience observes the agent and renders an assessment.

> The second point of view audience...concerns the relation between the agent and the first audience. It views the different forms of seeing, and always views them critically...To speak of the audience is...to speak metaphorically...The metaphors of an audience...reflect the structural features of the agent's becoming aware of the discrepancy between her own assumption about her state...and a possible detached observer-description of this state...and of her further being aware that she ought not to be in a position where she could so be seen, where such a description at least appears to fit (pp. 64-66).

This metaphorical "detached-observer" audience refers to what Williams considers the "more interesting" of the two mistakes (1993, p. 82). "The internalization of shame does not simply internalize an other who is a representative of (one's) neighbours" (p. 83). In an important passage from Shame and Necessity, Williams describes the possibility of the detached observer as other than one's associates and more than the voice of one's own conscience. This "second-self" can be an agent's conception of an idealized version of him or herself, someone that more closely approximates a truly virtuous person. Williams's passage reads:

> It is a mistake to take that reductive step and...that there are only two options: that the other in ethical thought must be an identifiable individual or a representative of the neighbours, on the

> one hand, or else be nothing at all except an echo chamber for my solitary moral voice. Those alternatives leave out much of the substance of actual ethical life (1993, p. 85).

Williams goes on to propose a feature of decision-making shared with utilitarianism: the obligatory requirement that moral agents weigh the consequences of various alternative courses of action in order to bring about the best of all possible worlds available.

> The internalized other is indeed abstracted and generalized and idealized, but he is potentially somebody rather than nobody, and somebody other than me. He can provide the focus of the real social expectations, of how I shall live if I act in one way rather than another, of how my actions and reactions will alter my relations to the world about me (p. 85).

The forward-looking component of shame - a sense of shame - would thus, upon consideration, restrict the field of alternatives. A sense of shame excludes some courses of action. Clearly, Aristotle recognizes this potential when he remarks, "For there are many things that shame...makes us do or *leave undone*" (Rhetoric, 1385a6, italics added) and, "Men are ashamed of saying, doing or *intending to do* shameful things (1367a8, italics added). It is in this sense that Taylor considers shame a protective emotion. One retains one's self-respect by avoiding shameful activities. This may be the sense in which we are to understand Williams's claim that a sense of shame is more than an "echo-chamber", more than the pangs of *my* conscience. In an ethical dilemma, the consideration an agent entertains can be "What course of action would a truly virtuous person choose?" This, it seems to me, is more than "What should I do?" which carries the implication that my inclinations, dispositions, and ethical history will sway my decision. In other words, when asking what should *I* do, we ask what would be "in character" for me to do.

But, this question, in one sense, lacks both abstraction and idealization. By way of illustration, the difference is forcefully captured in the question Christians ask, when they ask: "What would Jesus do?" Presupposed in this question is the idea that I might be inclined, persuaded perhaps, to perform act *a*; Christ, as an ideal, would not. What seems to be often overlooked in an analysis of shame is that this "better self" - in the forward-looking deliberations that are influenced by a sense of shame - is not the "present self".

John Kekes, in The Pluralism of Morality, concurs with the claim that shame can entail an abstracted and detached observation. It is noteworthy, that he does so however in the past tense.

> The feeling (of shame)...requires us to compare some aspect of our present self to a better self that would have approximated the value more closely than we have done...One requirement of this self-conscious comparison is detachment. We see a characteristic or action of ours as others would see it...and we accept this detached assessment (p. 143).

Presumably, "as others would see it" is an objective and harsh assessment. The judgment is clear and unprejudicial, unaffected by a possible leniency that permeates many self-assessments. Contrary to Kekes's implication, this sense of shame need not be confined by directionality; its effectiveness can be in reflection (backward-looking) or in projection (forward-looking). For the backward-looking version of shame - the emotional reaction to a failure or a transgression (or feeling ashamed for some specific act) - can inhibit this type of behavior in the future. Concerning the reflective power of shame, Marcia Baron hits upon a simple truth.

> (F)or while it is not inconceivable that someone might make first-person "moral ought" judgments in the present tense but never in the past, it would be odd. It would be strange since our thoughts about *how we should have acted* are one of the main sources of ideas as to *how we should act* (Baron, 1988, p. 260).

Not all commentators agree. Arnold Isenberg considers shame, as well as regret, to be "literally helpless, for they are concentrated upon what we can do nothing about, on the past. Hence, they are passive, incompatible with action" (1980, p. 375).

Whether shame is a significant emotion brings us to the section where we will take up several prominent and contrasting views in the literature. These views are represented by those who consider shame to be conditionally good (in a sense, positive), those who believe shame is neutral, and those who believe shame is intrinsically bad (negative). Prior to the attempt to articulate and comment on these positions, it is important to be clear about what kind of shame is the target. This introduces the notion of natural and moral shame to which we will turn next.

What seems to have been established thus far, however, is that any emotion that accommodates a detached-observer status can hardly be classified as primitive. It is not clear to me that I have come to terms with what Erikson and Bradshaw mean to imply by 'primitive'. If it connotes an affective reaction restricted to Erikson's preadolescent stage of development and/or the idea captured by Harper and Hoppes in their definition of shame as merely "an affect", their claims fail. Even if we concede shame is confined to a backward-looking ethical review, that requires us to acknowledge there is cognitive reflection and affective reaction. Any property with two interacting elements is more than primitive. To include the forward-looking desire to

reform and improve offers additional support to the objection against a primitive categorization.

So, at this juncture, there seems ample evidence to resist the claims that shame is either exclusively an external phenomena or that it is merely a primitive reaction.

Natural and Moral Kinds of Shame

In A Theory of Justice, John Rawls proposes that one way to distinguish shame experiences is by a classification into 'natural' and 'moral' types. Rawls defines natural shame as a reaction to a lack of, or the inability to exercise, certain excellences (1971, p. 444). Excellences are goods that are beneficial for the person who possesses them as well as for those with whom one associates. Rawls considers these to be goods since they enable us to realize a more satisfying plan of life. One way these attributes contribute to a more satisfying life is that the appreciation our associates have for our excellences "supports our self-esteem" (1971, p. 443).

Rawls tells us that wit, beauty, imagination and grace are among the natural excellences (1971). For a person to lack beauty or wit is an involuntary lack of excellence and, therefore, not blameworthy. According to Rawls, physical unattractiveness will occasion natural shame if, and only if, an individual aspires to a position that requires attractiveness.

> Natural shame is aroused by blemishes in our person....It is our plan of life that determines what we feel ashamed of, and so feelings of shame are relative to our aspirations, to what we try to do and with whom we wish to associate (p. 444).

Natural shame is in response to defects in our person "essential to our carrying out our more important associative aims" (p. 444). My unpleasant physical attributes, let's say, my ugly face, would cause me repeated episodes of natural shame were I to aspire to be a television newscaster. I can avoid such episodes by adjusting my goals toward more reclusive professions. Rawls illustrates his theory of natural shame with an example of musicality. Recognizing one lacks musical ability, one wisely does not attempt to be, say, a concert pianist. Such a person will devote her energies to other pursuits for which she is better suited; without aspirations to perform, these occasions for natural shame are eliminated. Rawls suggests one need not feel shame for a lack of musicality, "indeed it is no lack at all" (p. 444). An agent need only adjust her aspirations to accommodate her particular natural excellences and thereby minimizing the occurrences of natural shame.

Moral shame, by contrast, concerns voluntary behaviors that involve, say, acts of courage or self-control. The principles of right and justice are "used to describe the actions disposing us to feel moral shame" (p. 446).

> Moral shame is occasioned when someone lacks the virtues that his plan of life requires and is framed to encourage. He regards the virtues, or some of them anyway, as properties that his associates want in him and that he wants in himself" (p. 444).

With "some of them anyway" Rawls presumably regards moral virtue to be subject to an individual exercising a preferred selection of those virtues at which he or she can excel similar to the selection of natural excellences.

Gabriele Taylor and John Kekes reject the Rawlsian distinction between natural and moral kinds of shame. Natural shame, Kekes notes, is occasioned "because we are ugly, stupid, deformed, or have the wrong accent" (1993, p. 147). Defects such as these, he agrees, are unfortunate and may

detract from our self-esteem, but they are not blameworthy since they do not violate moral values. Moral shame, by contrast, "is supposedly caused by the realization that we are in some respect morally deficient" (Kekes, 1993, p. 145). Kekes cites cowardice, lying, and hurtful behavior as examples of morally blameworthy acts (p. 145).

In the Rawlsian scheme natural shame is "placed outside of morality" because it involves no choice (p. 146); but, Kekes takes a broader perspective. For him, morality is "concerned with living good lives, and there are many constituents about good lives about which we have no choice" (p. 146). These, he suggests, include the absence of social and personal handicaps. It is to a person's advantage to live in a society hospitable to his aspirations and endeavors, and to be blessed with the possession of the native endowments included in Rawls's natural excellences (e.g., wit, beauty, gracefulness). For Kekes, since natural disabilities frustrate aspirations to lead a good life, these disadvantages have moral implications. "The fact is...we find some aspect of our lives deficient. Shame is thus a moral feeling because morality has to do with living good lives" (p. 147)

Gabriele Taylor objects to the natural / moral distinction if the charge is these can be distinguished structurally. In all shame experiences, she claims, "the agent is seen as deviating from some norm, and in feeling shame he will identify with the audience's view" (1985, p. 57). The verdict that the agent accepts, in every case of shame, is that the agent has lost status. Taylor does not dispute shame can take different forms, just that they can not be distinguished structurally. Kekes makes a stronger claim. All episodes of shame have a moral dimension since each occurrence detracts from the project of leading a good life (1988, 1993).

It is not easy to be clear about precisely where the disagreement lies. Rawls explicitly recognizes that "we tend to be ashamed of...defects in our person and failures in our actions" which negatively affect our aims (p. 444). Kekes seems to say exactly this when he comments "defects and failures may exist independently of our choices...(so) shame is...an experience of failure, but it may or may not be culpable failure" (p. 146). By assigning culpability to some episodes of failure and not to others, Kekes appears committed to endorsing the natural / moral distinction.

Rawls is careful to distinguish those defects that we bring about from those that are visited upon us. But of the episodes of shame for which we assume responsibility, Rawls implies that only those that frustrate our chosen aspirations are morally significant. An individual can insulate himself to many shame experiences by adjusting his aspirations and by the selection of his associations. "What counts", Rawls proposes, "is that the the internal life of these associations is suitably adjusted to the abilities and wants of those belonging to them" (1971, p. 441).

Moral or natural shame therefore takes on a remarkable subjectivity in a Rawlsian scheme. As Martha Craven Nussbaum remarks, this view is counter-intuitive.

> According to this account, apparently, a position that is not felt as shameful is not so. And if you *feel* your life plan to be a worthy one and *feel* confident that you can carry it out, that appears sufficient to make you a person of self-respect. Rawls thus implicitly denies that the objective...value of my pursuits and the truth of my beliefs about them are at all relevant to the issue of self-respect and shame (1980, p. 398).

Kekes's view goes to the other extreme with his claim that all shame is morally significant. In Facing Evil, Kekes develops an elaborate theory of good and evil in which he classifies unchosen actions (which allegedly involve no

choice) as among those acts that may legitimately considered morally wrong. These, he suggests, include acts that emanate from settled dispositions to act in particular ways in certain situations. An important point in Kekes's argument is that the contributing factors in the constitution of a settled disposition need not be the result of personal choice.

> Customs, laws, rules, ceremonies, and rituals may be evil in a derivative way if conformity to or participation in them causes much undeserved harm (1990, p. 48).

An illustration of such acts might be the various harms a klansman inflicts upon minorities. Many of these harms may not be thoughtfully chosen but rather manifest characteristically from a settled disposition of intolerance acquired in the klansman's racist upbringing. In Kekes's theory, then, appeal to a misguided education or an "unchosen" status does not absolve someone of moral responsibility for committing evil deeds. In Kekes's theory the klansman ought to be ashamed of his beliefs and of the actions that emanate from these beliefs. This is a complex concept, but much of it seems right. In assessing the level of responsibility for one's actions and also for having certain emotions, Justin Oakley offers an important insight.

> In determining whether a person is responsible for something which they cannot simply at will prevent themselves from doing or having, what we should consider is how they came to be in a position where their doing or having it is now unavoidable (1992, p. 129).

In "Shame and Moral Progress" Kekes appeals to this point in order to justify investing all shame experiences with a moral dimension.

> The distinction (of moral and natural shame) becomes untenable...since the distinction rests on the assumption that morality and choice coincide. Since the objects of natural shame are not chosen...natural shame (in Rawls's theory) is placed outside of morality (p. 285)

Kekes's point seems to be to impress upon his readers that the impact upon our lives of natural shame can be just as debilitating as moral shame as both detract from the project of leading a good life. And that which contributes to or detracts from leading a good life is a moral consideration. But this does not make the distinction untenable. Kekes's objection to separate natural and moral categories relies on the effects of the shame, not on the specific grounds that identifies an agent's moral responsibility for a particular failure or transgression. He makes his objection stronger.

> Whether we feel ashamed depends on the fact that we have violated some value of ours and not on whether the violation was due to innate or acquired, voluntary or involuntary, accidental or cultivated causes...(Shame) understands only success and failure; the language of motive, intention, and effort, the consideration of causes, obstacles, and odds are foreign to it. (1988, p. 146).

Many notions in this quotation seem wrong. Kekes's primary error might be traced back to an equivocation. At one point Kekes invests shame with cognition, affect, and desire. Yet, at another time, he asserts shame only understands success or failure and claims shame is "a primitive, inexorable feeling" (1988, p. 286). Clearly an emotion with cognitive and appetitive properties understands more than that one has failed. If moral shame is a response to failing to approximate the better self, an agent will be well aware of the sincerity of his motives and effort. And 'intention' is the very "index of seriousness" that Kekes himself ascribes to shame.

Secondly, it does not seem plausible that all episodes of natural shame will affect an agent's conception and acquisition of the good life. People deprived of some of the blessings of good natural fortune are not necessarily dissuaded from their important life goals. A person need not be handsome, a witty conversationalist, or have other admirable social skills to be a successful surgeon or an astronaut. For example, a surgeon may occasionally feel ashamed of his blundering, awkward bedside manner and also of the discomfort his physical unattractiveness creates in some situations. At the same time, aware of his intentions, his extraordinary efforts, and his motives to heal the sick, he accepts and views these unpleasant moments as quite inconsequential. The surgeon may indeed be ashamed of his lack of natural excellences, but these in no significant way detract from his important commitments and accomplishments.

In conclusion, a distinction of natural and moral shame seems legitimate. Not every episode of natural shame need be infused with moral considerations. By the same token, it seems equally wrong to accept Rawls's proposal that the process of electing personal aspirations will thereby designate the parameters for moral shame experiences. It is clearly an indefensible position to suggest that murder, theft, or adultery are not shameful if an agent does not *feel* ashamed after committing one of these acts. A report such as this entails an incorrect belief, a morally objectionable object, and a deficient sense of affectivity.

Kekes is correct to assign moral significance to shame. It has been objected that the range of cases he allows is too broad. The literature on shame is equally split on the issue of significance. In an attempt to propose shame's proper moral significance, let us turn to some representative and conflicting views.

The Significance of Shame

The claim that shame can be conditionally good means roughly that the emotion can contribute in some positive way to the future conduct and/or to the character of an agent. Inasmuch as shame is widely, if not universally, recognized as a painful, self-directed feeling of diminishment, for an author to propose that shame might be instrumentally good seems sufficient justification to categorize that writer as holding a qualified positive attitude toward the emotion. According to this scheme, alternative positions can be classified as neutral or negative. In this section we will review representative views from each category, consider the various strengths and weaknesses in the respective positions, and conclude with a proposal suggesting shame has moral significance.

The Negative View: Isenberg's Argument

In Natural Pride and Natural Shame, Arnold Isenberg characterizes shame as "misery heaped upon miseries" (1980, p. 365) and "an enduring curse" (p. 366). Isenberg's argument hinges upon the notion of "reasonableness". Pride, he suggests, is reasonable since it is "the pleasure of reflecting upon what one has already accomplished, (and it) reinforces the incentive to acts of the same kind" (p. 360). Citing Spinoza, Isenberg asserts pride is synonymous with "self-satisfaction, the pleasure arising from the contemplation of oneself...the greatest good for which we can hope'" (p. 361).

The analysis of shame, Isenberg writes, "runs parallel to the analysis of pride" (p. 365). However, since he offers no specific definition, we may assume

Isenberg accepts pride's definition to be suitably adjusted for shame. That would read: Shame is: 1) a quality; 2) which is disapproved (or considered undesirable); and, 3) is judged to belong to oneself (p. 357). This definition is supported by the text. Regarding shame, Isenberg offers the following comments.

> Shame is the feeling that comes with the consciousness of faults, weaknesses, disadvantages - that is qualities deemed undesirable. Most of these qualities, like deformity, ugliness, and vice, already entail suffering by their very nature, so that shame is a misery heaped upon miseries (p. 365, underlining added).

Isenberg acknowledges the position that suggests shame is potentially beneficial in that it is necessarily connected with "standards of rectitude" (p. 374). Without a conception of the right and the good, the notion of shame would be unintelligible. And Isenberg accepts Spinoza's observation that it is preferable to be an ashamed man than to be a wicked and shameless man (1980). But shame and regret, Isenberg argues "cannot be sanctioned just because it testifies to something good: the question is whether it accomplishes anything good" (p. 374). On this point, Isenberg is unequivocal.

> (Shame and) regret by (themselves) effect nothing...(They) are literally helpless, for they are concentrated upon what we can do nothing about, on the past. Hence, they are "passive", incompatible with action...Shame...is seen as a price we may pay for our weaknesses and the attempt to cope with them; and morbidity...is the evidence...of the inability to act (p. 375).

Since shame is powerless to effect positive change, but rather leads to "despondency", to "morbidity", and to directionless "brooding", it is unreasonable to be ashamed of our weaknesses and of our vices (p. 374-5).

> It is as unreasonable to tolerate the sear of shame upon the spirit as it is to permit a wound to fester in the body. There is no such thing as a right amount of shame, as there is a right kind and amount of pride. *Every* shame, however circumscribed, must go (p. 369).

When feeling proud, on the other hand, we are encouraged to perform similar acts as those that have elicited pride. Unlike shame, it is, therefore, a reasonable emotion (p. 367).

Isenberg makes two separate claims in his analysis of shame. First, he claims that shame invariably makes a state of affairs worse, never better. Shame is a misery in reaction to a quality or vice that causes us misery. Second, Isenberg claims that *every* shame is passive, incapable with motivating action, and literally helpless to bring about reformative or positive change. In us, shame *festers* ineffectually. Both these views, it seems to me, are false.

In order to refute Isenberg's first claim, it will require a discussion of two different principles regarding how elements interact in a state of affairs. So, let us turn now to Isenberg's first claim, that shame is misery upon misery.

Two Ways to Calculate the Instumental Value of Pain

The claim to be defended here is that Isenberg is wrong to assert that shame always makes a state of affairs worse. To substantiate this objection requires an understanding of the concept of shame as a part of a whole. Isenberg's point is that with the inclusion of shame into a wider state of affairs, the whole is therefore invariably worse.

There are two relevant and conflicting theories of how parts contribute to the value of a whole. One is explained by the principle of summation. This,

it seems clear, is how Isenberg understands shame to contribute to a state of affairs. The other theory is the principle of organic unities. This, it seems equally clear, is the proper way to understand shame's contribution as a part of the whole.

Franz Brentano, in a footnote in his article "The Origin of Our Knowledge of Right and Wrong", explains: "The principle (of summation) tells us that if a feeling is good, then if the feeling is increased, the goodness of the act is increased" (p. 23). Degrees of bad feelings work similarly. As bad feelings increase, the badness of the act increases and the intrinsic value of that act decreases. Likewise as either good and bad feelings decrease, so does the act's goodness or badness respectively with the appropriate change in intrinsic value.

The principle of summation can be defined as follows:

PS: The value of a whole is the same as the sum of the values of the parts.

It is important to note that this principle does not require that the parts of a whole are static or that their value must remained fixed as in elementary mathematical addition or subtraction equations. An example of a "fixed principle of summation" might be this: Let's assume, S, empties his pocket and counts his change. He has a quarter, a dime, and a nickel. In all, S has forty cents. The value of the whole (all the change) is the same as the sum of the values of the parts (25 + 10 + 5). Regardless of whether S combines the nickel with more change or spends the quarter and the dime, the nickel's value remains the same. The value of each coin is constant; the nickel will always be worth five cents. Its value, then, is not subject to fluctuation by virtue of

the composition of the whole of which the nickel is a part. But this is not the way Brentano intends us to understand the principle of summation.

As the principle applies to emotions and human conduct the elements of cognition, affect (pleasure and pain), and desire interact. As they do, the application of the principle becomes far more complex than the 'fixed' version. To calculate the value of a state of affairs, Brentano establishes some important distinctions regarding affect. In an analysis of Brentano's position, Chisholm summaries these relevant considerations.

> We may ask, first, whether the pleasure or displeasure is *correct* or *incorrect*. We may ask, secondly, about the *quality of the intentional object*. Is it a pleasure (or displeasure) in the good, in the bad, or in the indifferent? And we may ask, finally, whether it is *true* or *false* (Chisholm, 1986, p. 67)

Two seemingly uncontroversial principles, and ones that Brentano believes to be true, are: Pleasure, in and of itself, is good; pain, in and of itself, is bad (1986). However, regarding pleasure in the bad, Brentano writes: "Pleasure in the bad,...to the extent that it is...an incorrect emotion...is something that is bad...Better that there be no pleasure at all than pleasure in the bad" (p. 65).

In an explication of Brentano's position, Chisholm illustrates this idea with an example pertinent to this study.

> Aristotle says that "shamelessness - not to be ashamed of doing bad actions - is bad". Suppose I believe I have performed an evil deed and I contemplate what I take to be this deed. The contemplation of this deed...will not in itself be bad; we may say that it is neutral...Consider now that the neutral state of affairs that is my not being ashamed of that which I contemplate. If we combine these two neutrals we arrive at that <u>bad state that is failure to be ashamed</u> at the contemplation of one's misdeed (Chisholm, 1986, pp. 84-5, underlining added).

So it appears that Brentano has run into difficulty. If he intends to claim that as a bad feeling increases, the badness of the larger state of affairs (of which the bad feeling is a part) increases proportionally, then he appears to have committed himself to endorsing conflicting principles. In combining these two ideas, we arrive at the unfortunate conclusion that if we increase the pleasure in the bad, since it is pleasure, then the goodness of the act will increase and, since the intentional object is wrong (some bad from which the agent derives pleasure) the badness of the act also increases.

Let us take a simple example to illustrate the difficulty. Let's consider S, a young boy, intentionally inflicts some pain upon a dog. Here are some, but not all, of the features of this state of affairs. S commits an act of cruelty, S has an emotional reaction to this act, and the dog experiences some pain. For simplicity in this discussion, let us assign some arbitrary numerical values. These could be:

Ex. 1: The act of cruelty (-10); An emotional response of shamelessness (0); The pain to the dog (- 5)

The value of this state of affairs, according to the principle of summation, is (-15). Now consider the emotional response of taking pleasure in the infliction of pain upon the dog. Here, the emotional response might equal (+10), for, as Brentano says, pleasure, in and of itself, is good. Now the parts look like this:

Ex. 2: Cruelty (-10); emotion of pleasure (+10); pain to the dog (- 5).

This implies the state of affairs in Ex. 2 is preferable to the state of affairs in Ex. 1, since { - 5 > -15}. But, Brentano wants to say that pleasure in the bad is bad. From the essay "Origins of our Knowledge" he writes:

> We prefer joy to sadness - unless it is joy in what is bad. Were there beings who preferred things the other way around, we would take their attitudes to be perverse, and rightly so (p. 22).

The difficulty for Brentano is that if he wants to claim that an emotion has to be correct, then this conflicts with a simple reading of the sum of the values of the parts. For example 1, although mathematically less, is intrinsically preferable to example 2. However, example 1 would appear to have three bad parts, or two bad parts and one neutral part, whereas example 2 has two bad parts and one good part (pleasure). The principle of summation states that, in example 2, as the cruel boy's pleasure increases, so does the goodness of the state of affairs. If, for example, the boy takes immense pleasure (say, + 50) in the infliction of some pain (- 5), we are left with a state of affairs of positive intrinsic value (+ 35). This is, of course, a predominately good state of affairs (pleasure far outweighs pain), but it is clearly a repugnant conclusion. It seems sensible to conclude that the application of the principle of summation has run into serious difficulty.

Isenberg's comments suggest we arrive at a similar conclusion. Following his argument, this appears to be the result.

Ex. 1: An act of cruelty (- 10); shamelessness (0); pain to the dog (- 5).
Ex. 3: An act of cruelty (- 10); shame (- 5); pain to the dog (- 5).

Isenberg's arguments suggests Ex. 1 is intrinsically preferable to Ex. 3. Mathematically we cannot dispute that shame has made this situation worse. But this conclusion is problematic. G. E. Moore, in Principia Ethica, offers an intriguing solution.

> Whether the addition of a bad thing to a good whole may increase the positive value of the whole,...is, at least, possible, and this possibility must be taken into account in our ethical investigations. However we may decide particular questions, the principle is clear (Moore, 1988, p. 28).

The quotation continues with Moore establishing the principle of organic unities. It is:

POU: *"The value of a whole must not be assumed to be the same as the sum of the values of its parts"* (p. 28, italics in original).

In later writings, Brentano appears to have come to accept the theory of organic unities (Chisholm, 1986, p. 69). In conflict with the principle of summation, he proposes in particular circumstances that as a bad feeling is introduced, the value of the whole becomes more positive.

> In..."On the good that there is in order or arrangement", Brentano says that the evil that is involved in retribution may yet make a bad situation less bad than it would have been without the retribution. Wickedness accompanied by sorrow is better than the same wickedness accompanied by pleasure; this fact, Brentano suggested, may justify the sorrow that is involved in repentance...If A is a wicked deed and if B is the suffering involved in the sinner's remorse...than the two evils, A and B, *may be preferable* to A without B (p. 72, italics added).

The conclusion to consider is that a whole with a bad part can be preferable to the same whole without that bad part. For what Brentano's final

view on organic unities suggests is that shamelessness in reaction to the infliction of pain is an *incorrect* emotion. Likewise, if the boy were to justify his shamelessness with the belief the dog felt no pain, then the shamelessness component entails a *false* belief. This, then, expresses how to view the notion that displeasure in the bad is a better state of affairs than pleasure in the bad. This requires that we recalculate the values in our examples. To agree with the principle of organic unities, we might propose this revision.

Ex. 1: an act of cruelty (-10); pain to the dog (-5); shamelessness {no pleasure or pain (0), incorrect emotion (-10)}

Ex. 2: an act of cruelty (-10); pain to the dog (-5); shame {pain/displeasure (-5), correct emotion (+5), true belief (+5)}.

Here, we have an argument that appears to retain the general idea of the principle of organic unities and one that contains adjusted values which accommodates shame into a state of affairs that is mathematically preferable to an alternative without shame. Obviously, we can conclude that the introduction of shame into a state of affairs does not invariably make that state of affairs worse. Feeling ashamed for intentionally inflicting pain upon some innocent is intrinsically and instrumentally preferable to no reaction or a reaction of pleasure. And this does not, of course, in itself prove nor commit us to say that shame is good. The intrinsic value of Ex. 2 is (-10). It is only to say, as does Brentano, that cruelty with shame is preferable to cruelty without shame.

Isenberg's Argument Reconsidered

Providing the above points about the preferability of displeasure in the bad are true, Isenberg's argument for the unreasonableness of *every* shame fails. For displeasure in the bad is preferable to both a neutral attitude or deriving pleasure in the bad. For S to admit that he did intentionally inflict the pain is *true*. And for S to be displeased is the *correct* emotion. To think otherwise is a false belief; to feel otherwise, as argued in our examples of the profound regret of the taxi driver, is a moral deficiency.

Citing Spinoza, Isenberg himself recognizes it is better to be ashamed of some wickedness than to be "wicked and shameless" (p. 374, 1980). So, Isenberg recognizes instances when the inclusion of shame in a state of affairs will be preferable to the emotional response of shamelessness. Isenberg can still maintain that every episode of shame makes a state of affairs worse. He need only propose that the same state of affairs with shamelessness is even worse still. The 'organic unity argument' attempts to refute this logic. Either conclusion, however, can stand independently of whether shame accomplishes anything good, a qualification Isenberg wants to impose upon calculating shame's instrumental value. We will return to second point - that of accomplishments - in a latter section. The refutation of Isenberg's second claim requires substantially more preliminary work.

The Neutral View: Urmson's Argument

In his provocative and important essay, "Aristotle's Doctrine of the Mean", J. O. Urmson examines the Aristotelian contention that all emotions

are legitimate if felt and expressed in the proper degree. Apparent exceptions to the application of Aristotle's mean (the triad of excessive / mean / deficient expressions of the emotions) are justice, envy, spite, and shame. Although Aristotle explicitly recognizes shame to accommodate the triadic scheme, Urmson makes some startling claims to disallow shame's inclusion in the Aristotelian table of virtues and vices.[14] In that table, Aristotle proposes the excess of shame to be shyness, the mean to be shame, and the deficient state to be shamelessness.[15]

Urmson understands Aristotle to propose all emotions have a appetitive component (e.g., fear entails the desire for safety, anger entails the desire for retaliation, etc.). But in the case of shame, Urmson takes Aristotle to suggest it is "a mere reaction", an emotion without an element of choice and without desire (1980, p. 169). Urmson concludes that:

> In the case of shame...we seem to be faced with a mere passive reaction involving no desire. Shame is largely a physiological reaction...Neither (shame nor rejoicing in the misfortunes of others) is a motive for action (p. 169).

Urmson concedes that his speculations on Aristotle's account of shame may not be "clearly true or clearly what Aristotle had in mind" (p. 169). Several reasons suggest this account of shame is clearly not what Aristotle had in mind.

Urmson maintains that shame is: 1) passive; 2) a mere physiological reaction; 3) motivationless; and, 4) nonappetitive (1980). None of these points are supported in Aristotle's texts.

---

[14] See J. A. K. Thomson's translation of Aristotle's Nicomachean Ethics (1953) page 104.
[15] In The Passions of the Soul, Descartes appears to propose impudence is a excess of shamelessness. There he defines impudence as a contempt for shame. It is, he says, "rather a vice opposed to shame and also to pride, inasmuch as these are both good". Impudence, he remarks, is especially bad in that it inclines people to disregard the "many constraints to which honor bound them" with the additional feature of an apparent deliberate choice to embrace shamelessness (see CSM, pp.401-2).

Aristotle explicitly refers to shame as an emotion (NE, 1128b20). If the earlier accounts of an emotion are correct, an appetitive component is a necessary constituent. To define shame as "a fear of disrepute" unquestionably implies, negatively, an agent desires to avoid disgrace, if not, positively, to conduct oneself honorably. So the nonappetitive claim fails as does the reductive view that shame is a mere physiological reaction. One cannot engage in self-assessment of honorable and dishonorable conduct without cognitive operations. If Urmson wants to claim these cognitive operations precede the physiological reaction of shame and are not a constituent of it, he encounters the serious problem of how he intends to distinguish shame from, say, embarrassment or humiliation.

To suggest that shame is motivationless seems clearly to be a misreading of Aristotle. As a result, Urmson seems to contradict himself as he attempts to substantiate his interpretation. In the Rhetoric, Aristotle explicitly says there are many things before those who admire us that the motivational component of shame "makes us do or leave undone" (1387a7). Urmson appears aware of this passage for he remarks: "Shame may, indeed, hold me back from action; but perhaps we have to distinguish a desire not to do something from an inability to bring oneself to do it" (1980, p. 169).

A defense of Aristotle's claim of a motivational component could simply rest on Urmson's concession that shame "holds me back". Not wanting to perform *a* is reason to perform *b* (or *not a*). And, of course, this comment does not address how Urmson intends to deal with those acts that shame "makes us do". But even the notion that we leave things undone from some alleged "inability" to do them will fail to support Urmson's claims. The above quotation is an obscure, if not a muddy, sentence. Somewhat tentatively, I take it to mean this: shame is not a motive for action if it renders us unable to

act. But how are we to understand the notion of being unable to act?

Consider inflicting pain upon children for pleasure and amusement. Most everyone would be unable to bring themselves to do such a thing. They have an inability to perform this act. But why? I suggest one reason this is so is that it is disgraceful behavior. What is shameful is the needless infliction of pain on a child coupled with perverse enjoyment. But this is not from an inability to hurt a child in the sense of a physical impossibility. One refrains from it because there are compelling reasons to minimize suffering in the world.

A somewhat better illustration of the inability to act is captured in the tale of George Washington and the cherry tree. It is reported he responded, "I cannot tell a lie". A common interpretation is that Washington meant lying is prohibited, and that which is prohibited cannot be done. But a better interpretation might be this: Washington meant lying is shameful behavior and shameful behavior is repugnant to a virtuous man. Since under normal circumstances virtuous men will not voluntarily elect to do that which they know to be bad, Washington could not lie. Truthfulness is what morality requires. If the desire to do what morality requires is strong enough, we might say a man will be unable to act otherwise. As with inflicting needless pain, there is no compelling reason for a virtuous man to lie. Lying is repugnant and no one desires that which he estimates as offensive. In stark contrast to Urmson's proposal, here, perhaps, we are justified in being *unable* "to distinguish a desire not to do something from an inability to bring oneself to do it".

Urmson's claim might be that it is not desire because it emanates from a settled disposition not to inflict pain; there is no choice because inflicting pain is not an alternative we would entertain. To argue this, I think, Urmson would

have to show that a sense of shame played no part in the formation, and in the maintenance, of such a disposition. I do not see how this can be done. Or Urmson's claim may simply mean that on occasion we find ourselves simply immobilized. If this is the point, then Urmson should make clear how shame is the immobilizing factor and not that it can be attributed to confusion, indecision, a weakness of will, or cowardliness.

As with Isenberg, Urmson's argument hinges in an important way on an account of shame that does not recognize a component of desire. This is a fundamental mistake. To consider this, let's review Urmson's final charge that shame is a neutral emotion because it is "passive".

The Classification of Emotions as Passive or Active

One common method of distinguishing the emotions is to categorize them as active or passive. Isenberg considers shame passive because it is "incompatible with action" (p. 375). Presumably, active emotions are motivational. John Kekes holds a similar view; shame is passive because it often "assails" us and it also indicates no direction for us to turn in order to respond to or rectify the assault (1988). Urmson interprets shame to be a passive, nonappetitive emotion, a "largely physiological reaction...involving no desire" (1980, p. 169).

In Morality and the Emotions, Justin Oakley distinguishes an active and passive categorization by virtue of the nature of the desire in the particular emotion. Oakley appears to imply that an emotion is active if the component of desire motivates a public or external performance (as in the making amends in the case of guilt), whereas passive might imply a solitary reaction of withdrawal (as in the desire in shame to hide or disappear).

> Anger might be regarded as an active emotion because it involves the desire to seek out the offender for retaliation, while grief might be thought a passive emotion because it involves perhaps the desire to be left alone and for the past to be different (1992, p. 35).

But neither Isenberg nor Urmson can appeal to the nature of the desire because, for them, shame entails no desire. Isenberg restricts shame to reflections on "what we can do nothing about, on the past" (1980, p. 375). Since no one deliberates about what is unchangeable, shame prompts "irrelevant acts of atonement" and "despondency" (pp. 374-5).

To relegate shame to the status of a physiological reaction eliminates the component of desire in Urmson's account. Here shame is merely an affect as in the recognition that we are blushing. But, as has been argued, without desire shame could not be an emotion.

Oakley's analysis of active and passive emotions necessarily connects with activity. According to the nature of the act an emotion inspires, Oakley distinguishes active from passive; one expects exertion from active emotions and one expects withdrawal or a resigned acceptance from the passive emotions.

What these accounts overlook is: 1) the Aristotelian insight that a passive emotion entails a potentiality to be affected in a certain way, and 2) that feelings not only precede actions but they also follow in the wake of activity. Both these considerations are explored by L. A. Kosman in "Being Properly Affected: Virtues and Feelings in Aristotle's Ethics".

Kosman tells us that for Aristotle, as for Plato, the questions of moral philosophy are ones that address how we are to conduct ourselves as well as how we are to become the type of person for whom proper conduct is second nature (1980). "The good person is not simply one who behaves a certain way,

but one who behaves that way out of a certain character" (1980, p. 103). Clearly, good character requires activity, but Aristotle also recognizes that how one is affected - how one is acted upon - is an important component in one's moral life. So, Aristotle is concerned with "activities for which the virtues are dispositions of two sorts, actions and feelings" (p. 104).

> (Aristotle) views what we would call feelings and emotions as modes of a subject being acted upon. This fact is further revealed in the list Aristotle offers us of emotions with which the moral virtues are concerned and in which there can be excess, deficiency, and right measure. The majority of items...are described by passive verbs; in thinking of fear, anger, pleasure or pain, Aristotle is thinking of being frightened, being angered, being pleased, being pained (p. 104).

Since his list includes shame, Aristotle must be thinking also of being ashamed. And the virtues, in Aristotelian terms, are activities broadly construed as an individual acting as well as being acted upon. Kosman thus understands Aristotle's moral theory to be concerned with how to act well and how to feel well. The moral virtues, Kosman takes Aristotle to be saying, are states of character that enable a person to exhibit the right kind of emotion and the right kind of action (1980). The development of a virtuous disposition, then, necessarily requires a potentiality to feel and to act in the right measure.

> The doctrine of passive potentiality enables Aristotle to envision a state of character by virtue of which an individual has the power to be affected in certain ways, the capacity to undergo certain passions and avoid others. A moral virtue with respect to feelings or emotions is just such a capacity; it is the power to have and to avoid certain emotions, the ability to discriminate in what one feels (p. 107).

A sense of shame, then, is a dispositional potentiality to be affected by past, present, or future honorable and disgraceful behaviors; shamelessness is

an inability to be acted upon by disgraceful behaviors. A passive emotion, in the sense of being receptive to certain affections, is, for Aristotle, a power. To say, as Aristotle tells us in the Metaphysics, that oil is burnable is to ascribe to oil a potential to be affected in a specific way (Kosman, 1980). Similarly, regarding actions and feelings, Aristotle is suggesting that a virtuous person has developed his or her capacities to be affected in specific ways. A moral virtue with respect to feelings "is the power to have and to avoid certain emotions, the ability to discriminate in what one feels" (1980, p. 107). Kosman thus enables us to understand in a new way a famous passage from Aristotle.

> It is easy to get angry - anyone can do that...but to feel or act towards the right person to the right extent at the right time for the right reason in the right way - that is not easy...Hence to do these things is a rare, laudable and fine achievement (1109a26-28).

With the properly tuned potentiality, a person acts out of anger with respect to the correct measure of feeling. Kosman points out with respect to courage and fear, it is not that courage as a virtue disposes us to merely feel fear in certain ways, or circumstances, or to some specific degree, "but rather that it disposes us to certain actions with respect to and in light of our fear" (1980, p. 108). A virtuous agent has developed his powers to feel in the right measure which then enables one to act or respond appropriately to the occasion.

The rich and complex notion of feelings that follow in the wake of actions has also been largely overlooked. Here passive potentiality plays an equally important role. Shame is often characterized as exclusively backward-looking (Borysenko, 1990). Many discussions halt further examination after proposing shame is a primitive and bad feeling that one has when reflecting on

a failure (Bradshaw, 1988). Others classify it as a blow to one's self-esteem (Rawls, 1971). Warnings are then issued about dwelling on these feelings (Isenberg, 1980). Alternative reactions are occasionally suggested (Kekes, 1988, 1993). But here again the notion of passive potentiality benefits our understanding as it sheds new light on another frequently paraphrased section from Aristotle.

> The virtues we do acquire by first exercising them...Anything that we have to learn to do we learn by the actual doing of it...we become just by performing just acts, temperate by performing temperate ones, brave by performing brave ones (1103a30-b2).

Aristotle is not suggesting that a child acquires a brave disposition by performing one act of bravery nor is he suggesting, in a strict sense, that we choose our feelings. As Kosman notes: "we do not decide to be virtuous and straightaway become so" (1980, p. 111). It would be more accurate to understand Aristotle to say that after an act of bravery, the child "feels" brave and recognizes that feeling as pleasurable and correct. Kosman addresses this point elegantly.

> On this view the structure of becoming virtuous with respect to feelings reveals itself to be of the following sort: one recognizes through moral education what would constitute appropriate and correct ways to feel in certain circumstances. One acts in ways that are naturally associated with and will "bring about" those very feelings, and eventually the feelings become, as Aristotle might have said, second nature; that is one develops states of character that dispose one to have the right feelings at the right time...although we may in some narrow sense not be responsible for our feelings, we are responsible for our character as the dispositional source of those feelings (p. 112).

Viewed in this way the notion of a passive emotion becomes more complex. It is a power, a potential to be affected in certain ways. So in

deliberating how one should act an agent includes in his calculations how he should feel toward the alternatives and how he will feel after each alternative. A sense of shame influences the formation of an agent's disposition and the agent's perception of how he or she will feel with respect to future conduct. One reason shamelessness is bad is that it is a lack of this potential to correctly respond to disgraceful behavior. When we regrettably marvel at the remorselessness displayed by serious criminals, part of our reaction is puzzlement at how they can lack this potential to be ashamed. And without the anticipation of an adverse reaction, shame's power to restrain immoral behavior is seriously hampered. On this reading we can guard against the hasty reduction of passive emotions to be merely affect. The agent sensitive to being "acted upon" in the right way, at the right time, and to the right degree engages cognition, affect and desire. And although shame may be characterized as passive, the influence this feeling has upon the agent cannot be divorced from how he intends to conduct himself in the future. Viewed in this way, the categorization of passive and active emotions can be misleading; the 'passive' emotion of shame has an active component which can be just as motivational as that found in anger.

Isenberg's and Urmson's theories of shame suffer from a neglect of passive potentiality. This notion undermines Isenberg's second claim of the inability of shame to motivate action. In deliberating about alternative courses of action, an agent naturally considers how he "will be" and how he "will feel" in the wake of these various alternatives. These considerations, contrary to Isenberg's protests, seem perfectly "reasonable". This limitation also infects the elaborate theory of shame proposed by John Kekes. Let us turn to that now.

A Qualified Positive View: Kekes's Argument

With the publication of "Shame and Moral Progress" in 1988, John Kekes introduced a scholarly and persuasive theory of moral shame. His through analysis accommodates what has been argued to be the essential components of an emotion: affect, cognition and desire.

> In its affective aspect, shame is a painful self-directed feeling; in its cognitive aspect, it is a self-conscious detached comparison yielding the conclusion that we are in some way deficient because we have fallen short of some value we regard as important; and in its moral aspect, we feel the importance of the value we have violated because our conception of a good life requires that we should have lived up to it (1988, p. 286).

Kekes's acknowledges "the occurrence of shame is always significant" (p. 286). Defining shame as "a response to the realization that we have fallen short of some value we regard as important", Kekes considers shame to be "an index of the seriousness we feel about our values" (1993, p. 142). An individual incapable of feeling shame is so because he or she fails to attach any importance to standards, and Kekes proposes, as does Plato, that such individuals are, therefore, "apt to lack moral restraint" (1988, p. 282). Shame, for Kekes, is a sign of serious commitments, as well as an impetus for honoring those commitments since violations "painfully lowers our opinion of ourselves" (p. 282). With Rawls, Kekes believes by failing to live up to a certain conception of a good life, "our self-respect may suffer and we...come to feel shame" (p. 285).

Kekes's analysis also accounts for the sophisticated viewpoint of a detached-observer. An agent views an action of his as others might "and we accept their actual or hypothetical assessment" (p. 283). As with Taylor

(1985) and Williams (1993), Kekes considers the notion that shame necessarily requires an audience to be a "general mistake" (p. 284). "What is essential for shame is to detach ourselves from what we are, have, or do to the extent that we can view it as falling short of some standard" (p. 284). Kekes explicitly acknowledges the possibility of public manifestations of shame, but he also recognizes occasions for shame when there is no one there to observe us. For Kekes, shame, unlike humiliation, can emanate from either the operations of external exposure or from internal, solitary insights.

Another impressive feature of Kekes's analysis is his distinction of shame categories. From his recognition of an agent's commitment to standards combined with a detached-observer status, he distinguishes three shame-types: propriety-shame, honor-shame, and worth-shame (1988, 1993). Each shame-type involves a different cognitive operation and a different perspective from the audience.

In propriety-shame, standards set by appearances count against us. Here I feel shame when I am seen naked, in tattered clothes, or unwashed. Honor-shame "is consequent on having made standards of appearances definitive of our honor" (p. 290). We might say, as in a shame culture, "image *is* character". Here the appearance of bravery, of self-control, or of honesty will outweigh the intrinsic value of these qualities. I am ashamed to give the appearance of acting cowardly, not to have been cowardly. Detection by some external source elicits honor-shame. The last category, worth-shame, is independent of appearances. "Worth-shame is caused by a culpable failure to live up to private standards" (p. 290). Worth-shame is occasioned when public or private standards that an agent believes to be valid are violated although no one need be aware of the violation.

> In propriety-shame, we care about appearances; in honor-shame, we care about appearing as we are; in worth-shame, we care about being in a certain way and do not care about appearances. The progress is from caring about how we seem to caring about how we are (p. 290).

As the title of his article suggests, Kekes is concerned with moral progress, and the movement of one shame-type to the next is evidence of this kind of progress. Worth-shame attaches to a conception of "a better self", the abstracted ideal to which one aspires independent of appearances or public influence (1993, p. 143). But, unlike Isenberg, although Kekes attaches moral significance to shame, his account, like that of Isenberg, ultimately argues against it. From the chapter "The Prospects for Moral Progress", a revision of his 1988 article, Kekes succinctly remarks that: "the reasons against shame outweigh the reasons for it" (The Morality of Pluralism, 1993, p. 142).

Kekes suggests various reasons to justify his negative view of shame. Shame, for Kekes, is "likely to be self-destructive" (1988, p. 282). Not only does shame alert us to our shortcomings, it makes "feel deficient on account of them (1993, p. 142).

> (Shame) tends to undermine our confidence, verve, and courage...Thus it...jeopardizes the possibility of improvement by weakening the only agency capable of effecting it (1988, p. 282).

Kekes further disallows the potentially beneficial forward-looking and the backward-looking aspects of shame.

> If the alleged protection of shame is backward looking, concerning a wrong we have already done, then I fail to see how it can protect the self from "corruption and ultimately from extinction" For such corruption as there is has already set in due to the wrong we have done (p. 292).

And the claim that a sense of shame might encourage us "to leave (disgraceful) things undone" is dismissed.

> If (shame) is forward-looking, it is supposed to protect us from doing wrong in the future. But it cannot be shame...since...the wrong is in the future, so we have nothing yet to be ashamed about. The best that can be said is that the protection is provided by *fear* of shame, not by shame itself...And if we have fear as deterrent, then fear of punishment or fear of loss of love, respect, or status may serve just as well as fear of shame (1993, p. 155).

After disallowing shame to entail a future-orientated protective feature, Kekes lists what he considers to be several viable alternatives to the fear of shame. These alternatives presumably do not carry with them the debilitating qualities of shame. These, Kekes suggests, are: "anger at ourselves, resolution to improve, the desire to make amends, and a quest for understanding why we did what we regarded as wrong" (p. 292).

Having proposed viable alternatives to feeling shame, Kekes encourages us to focus on "our conception of a good life", rather than to "respond to our moral failure by *dwelling* on the deficiency that produced it" (p. 294). This is reminiscent of Isenberg's portrayal of shame as "brooding over our infirmities" in the throes of "self-flagellation" (Isenberg, 1980, pp. 374-5). Kekes even metaphorically likens shame to the medieval medical practice of administering poison to counteract illness (1988, p. 291). This reminds one of Isenberg's "misery upon misery" characterization. For both Kekes and Isenberg, ultimately "there is nowhere for shame to go. Like a vermin it eats deeper and deeper into the soul" (p. 289).

Comments on Kekes's Argument

John Kekes's analysis of shame is comprehensive and has appeal. He avoids several analytical errors that infect some of the earlier accounts reviewed. Kekes acknowledges each of the necessary components of the emotion of shame and assigns many of the proper attributes to them. Most important, he recognizes shame's elements of cognition and desire. With his explanation of worth-shame, Kekes avoids the mistakes of relegating shame to mere affect or of confining shame to merely an external operation. Worth-shame entails the idealized and abstracted detached-observer audience.

A central feature of Kekes's account is to propose an alternative response to shame that will be more conducive to moral progress. Rather than dwelling on our failures - which "undermines our control, reduces the chances of moral reform, and weakens the self" - Kekes suggests an agent redirect his concentration to that of the goal of living a good life (1993, p. 157). But the fundamental problem with Kekes's account seems to be that his objections to shame's possible effects do not align coherently with what his analysis proposes to be worth-shame's attributes.

Moral progress is alleged to occur as an agent evolves from a propriety-shame to worth-shame. Prevailing conventions and external appearances give way to a personal sense of values to which an agent is committed. These values then become definitive of that agent's conception of the good life (1993). "This is why his estimate of his own worth was connected to his values, and this is why shame, worth-shame, could follow from his violation of them" (p. 152). Given this, it is difficult to understand Kekes's easy dismissal of the protective feature of a forward-looking sense of shame. If an agent is

knowledgeable about and concerned with how he "ought to be" rather than how he appears, then he believes that to act in one way and not another will approximate the "better self". To act contrary to this conception of the abstracted ideal would bring about shame and disgrace. And this the agent wants to avoid. So, a sense of shame is significant in that it is a recognition of how honorable conduct constitutes and enables an agent to lead a good life.

Kekes's suggested alternatives to the fear of disgrace simply do not accommodate the sophisticated cognition and desires of worth-shame. To fear the loss of status or respect speaks to a concern with appearances and public recognition, not worth. The fear of punishment is no moral concern at all. In order to avoid public censure, an agent can act in accordance with prevailing conventions that he knows to be morally repugnant. Here an agent might voluntarily do moral wrong in order to avoid public reprisals. This motivation is irreconcilable with a "worth-shame" conception of a better self. What is perplexing is that Kekes appears to recognize this.

> If we fail, we are ashamed because we are dishonored. We are dishonored *by* giving the wrong impression, but it is honor, not the impression, that we care about...worth-shame is independent of appearance. It is caused by our culpable failure to live up to private commitments (p. 153).

To concede this, it is puzzling why Kekes would propose a fear of loss of love, respect, or status to be a preferable substitute reaction to feeling ashamed. Fear of these former eventualities apply to individuals motivated by propriety and honor. By his own lights Kekes acknowledges that an agent at a worth-shame stage will be discriminatingly unreceptive to appearances for motivating virtuous conduct.

Kekes dismissal of the potentially beneficial aspect of the backward-looking feature of shame is equally troubling. Kekes neglects to address how

an agent develops from propriety-shame to worth-shame but he does recognize, "Nobody wants to feel shame; we are assailed by it. Shame happens to us" (p. 157). When it does, why would it not indicate an alternative direction to pursue? Since I did act *a*, and now feel ashamed, would I not contemplate alternatives *b* or *c* for some similar future occasion. Second, if shame assails us, it seems possible, on some occasions, that it is alerting us to some course of action to which we gave too little thought. This seems to be the spirit of Aristotle's remarks that adolescents "living as they do under the sway of feelings, they often make mistakes, but are restrained by modesty" (1128b18). Kekes readily admits that "shamelessness is bad and self-respect is good" (p. 155). But, two reasons shamelessness is bad are the agent neglects to acknowledge the moral dimension of his conduct - as Kekes says he is apt to lack restraint - and that, passively, the agent is improperly affected. In this regard, shame sensitizes the agent. To be assailed by something suggests the agent had no particular idea of how the consequences of his behavior would reflect upon him. This seems to me to be a common sense view of how children come to learn some things. Motivated by anger or frustration they strike out and only later do they recognize the extent of the injury they cause. If and how they respond and adjust their future conduct is evidence of moral progress.

The objection that a backward-looking shame is powerless since corruption has already set in is simply too extreme. An isolated failure is not a sign of an unreformably corrupt disposition. On the contrary, to be unaffected by an isolated failure indicates the potential for corruptibility.

Kekes proposed alternatives to shame are equally unconvincing and they also signal a misalignment with worth-shame. The alternatives Kekes proposes are anger at ourselves, a desire to make amends, resolution to

improve, and an effort to understand our undesirable behavior. If Kekes recognizes an elevated sense of shame to transcend appearances, where no one need observe us, to whom do we make amends? What motivates the desire to make amends if this is not preceded by a pained recognition of a failure or a transgression? And how is anger at ourselves preferable to shame? How does one retaliate against oneself? How does retaliation suggest moral progress? Retaliation implies someone deserves some level of suffering for a past transgression. Nothing in the concept of retaliation entails the notion that the suffering required is to be rehabilitative. Furthermore, if Kekes attributes desire to shame, how does that exclude a "resolution to improve"? Would not an agent able to feel worth-shame be so precisely because he desires to improve? Pained by the discrepancy between his present self and his conception of a better self, he desires to reform or eliminate his shortcomings so as to more closely approximate the better self. Finally, anger and amends have traditionally attached to guilt and the resolution to improve attaches to repentance. So, there is nothing new in these alternatives. Kekes's project should make clear how they are also to attach to shame without further blurring the distinctions between these emotions. Nowhere does he undertake such a project. A comprehensive analysis of worth-shame should address these questions specifically.

Kekes begins and ends his article with a reference to the alleged disagreement between Plato (who attaches moral significance to shame) and Aristotle (who presumably does not). On two occasions Kekes reminds us to think carefully about Aristotle's remark, "If shamelessness is bad...that does not make it good to be ashamed" (p. 142; p. 155). For Kekes this statement constitutes the gulf between Plato and Aristotle. Aristotle's complete sentence, from J. A. K. Thompson's translation, reads as follows:

> Although shamelessness, that is, not being ashamed to do what is disgraceful, is a bad thing, it does not follow any the more from this that to be ashamed if one behaves disgracefully is a good thing (1128b31-33).

Aristotle immediately goes on to remark: "In the same way continence is not to be regarded as altogether a virtue either; it is sort of combination of virtue with something else" (1128b34). Aristotle establishes a hierarchy of states of character: temperant, continent, incontinent, and intemperant (Ethics, Book VII). Temperance is preferable to continence because a temperate man desires to do the right thing and does it. The continent man struggles with conflicting desires and succeeds in choosing the morally correct alternative. The incontinent man struggles and fails. Aristotle's analogy seems appropriate since the intemperate man desires to do the disgraceful, does so, and, in all likelihood, is shameless. With the connection of shame to continence, Aristotle's point may be that to struggle with conflicting desires is not ideal. An agent has yet to develop a character from which good acts emanate characteristically. Aristotle is clear that he regards intemperance as bad, but that does not commit him to suggest that the struggle with the desire to do disgraceful acts - whatever the outcome - is good. And it is in this manner that he considers continence and a sense of shame to be qualified goods: they contain bad parts but are preferable to the alternatives of intemperance and shamelessness respectively. Here the point is is that the best and worst states of character contain no struggle with vice. Better to struggle than to desire to do disgraceful acts and to lack the passive potential to be affected by disgracefulness.

It seems plausible that Kekes has not only misunderstood the intent of Aristotle's comment but that he also errs in a comparison between two

comments that have a temporal distinction. Regarding the time element, Plato's comments refer to shame's beneficial property in assessing possible courses of future action; Aristotle's comment refers to a reaction to a deed performed.

To dispel the notion that a legitimate disagreement on this point exists with Plato, Kekes might refer instead to the following passage from Aristotle's Ethics. In this passage, the element of time for Aristotle coincides with the time element in the quotation Kekes selects from Plato.

The passage from Aristotle reads:

> (Lectures on ethics) are incapable of impelling the masses towards human perfection. For it is the nature of many to be ruled by fear rather than by shame, and to refrain from evil not because of the disgrace, but because of the punishments (1179b7-14).

For Aristotle, then, a love of virtue and the worth-shame stage are rare and desirable. Recall Aristotle explicitly refers to shame as a fear of disgrace applicable to the past, the present, or *the future* (see the Rhetoric, 1383b).

Referring back to a previous example, the meaning of Aristotle's comment that it is not good to be ashamed of a disgraceful deed might more accurately be portrayed in the following list. In assessing the intrinsic value of states of affairs, the order of Aristotelian preferability is:

Ex. 1: an act of kindness (+10); pride (+5).
Ex. 2: an act of cruelty (-10); shame (-5).
Ex. 3 an act of cruelty (-10); shamelessness (-10).

The temperant man and the continent man both perform the act of kindness. A temperant agent is unconflicted; he wants to perform the kindness and he does. The continent man, by contrast, is torn. Some feature

of the cruel act is perceived as being pleasurable and the continent man does not want to forego an alternative act that contains some episode of pleasure. But reason succeeds over an appetitive leaning. The continent man comes to believe what the temperant man knows: higher pleasures accompany virtue. The incontinent man struggles with these same desires and loses. The desire for the wrong pleasure overwhelms. The intemperate man, cognizant of the pleasurable aspect of the cruel act and ignorant of the higher goods in an act of kindness, is unconflicted. Shamelessly and remorselessly, he performs the cruel act.

Aristotle is not suggesting it is a good state of affairs to have performed a disgraceful act; it seems clear he is suggesting only that is better to be ashamed if one does rather than to be unaffected. The struggle with conflicting desires are the "something else" that is mixed with continence and the restraining power of shame. Ideally, for Aristotle, the right act effortlessly emanates from a settled disposition. Let us revise the chart to accommodate this interpretation

1. (Temperance) An unconflicted act of kindness (+10) Pride (+5)
2. (Continence) A conflicted act of kindness (+5) Pride (+3)
3. (Incontinence) A conflicted act of cruelty (- 5) Shame (+1)
4. (Intemperance) An unconflicted act of cruelty (-10) Shamelessness (-10)

Now the intrinsic value of an unconflicted act of virtue (Ex. 1) takes precedence over the struggle with vice (Ex. 2) although, in both instances, a good act is eventually performed. As we see in the value of pride in continence, the agent is aware that he has been susceptible to temptation clouding his reason. This detracts from the pleasure. More than conflicted thoughts plague the incontinent man; he loses to the pull of a wrong-headed desire. But

in feeling some disgrace, Aristotle seems to clearly imply, the continent and the incontinent have a chance at reformation. The intemperant man is beyond repair. Aristotle can hold without contradiction that it is preferable to exhibit a potential for reform than not (e.g. - 4 > -20), together with the notion that to have performed a disgraceful deed is not good. For better still to be virtuous. But nowhere does Aristotle suggest a sense of shame is intrinsically bad. Again, without contradiction, he can maintain that shame is conditionally good although the whole state of affairs (understood as a complex organic unity) that entails a disgraceful act and a shameful reaction is not predominately good (e.g. - 4).

If this interpretation is correct, then Kekes is mistaken to suggest that on this point there is a disagreement between Plato and Aristotle.

To summarize, Kekes attributes moral significance to shame. However, his eventual discounting of shame is unpersuasive. He suggests untenable alternatives, he relies for support on a misinterpretation of a passage from Aristotle, his general classification of all shame as psychologically debilitating is too extreme, and his objections to the potentially beneficial aspects of shame do not accord with his development of a sense of shame through his shame-types.

In conclusion, Kekes recognizes the significance of shame - it is an index of an agent's serious commitment to standards and values. But he proposes alternative responses because he questions the conditionally good status of shame. Let us turn to two views of shame that do not share Kekes's reservations, those of Gabriele Taylor and Bernard Williams.

Positive Views: Taylor and Williams

Of all of the accounts of shame that John Kekes is aware, he considers Isenberg's and Gabriele Taylor's to be among "the most illuminating" (1988, p. 282). Kekes finds much of value in Taylor and the details of their accounts have many points in common, but he comes to prefer the negative view expressed by Isenberg.

Features of Taylor's account that Kekes adopts are the notions of: 1) the structural similarity of all shame experiences, 2) the detached observer audience, 3) a hierarchy of shame-types, and, 4) the view that all shame experiences have a moral dimension.

Taylor recognizes "very different cases" of shame, but she suggests that they all share the same structure (1985, p. 54). In every occasion of shame, Taylor proposes, the agent identifies with an audience's verdict that he has deviated from some norm and has thereby lost status (1985). The agent and the audience see the situation alike, and since there is a consensus, "in the eyes of both the agent is degraded" (p. 58). But Taylor has a complex view of the detached observer that gives the appearance of a contradiction; she acknowledges a case of shame wherein the agent *feels* shame because the verdict of the audience is one of approval. What distinguishes the different cases of shame is "*how* he is seen, whether he thinks of the audience as critical, approving, indifferent, cynical, or naive" (p. 60). The obvious difficulty is to reconcile an audience's verdict of approval with the notion that in the "eyes of both" the agent is degraded.

Taylor resolves this apparent contradiction by identifying three elements in each case of shame. The first element is the agent's adverse self-

regarding judgment. "She feels degraded, not the sort of person she believed, assumed, or hoped she was or...should be" (p. 64). The second element is an audience's "first point of view". Here the audience sees the agent under some description and with a particular attitude. These attitudes can range from approval, to indifference, or to a hostile disapproval. The third element - which resolves the apparent contradiction - is the "second" point of view audience. The second point of view is the relation of the agent to the first audience.

> This (second) point of view is always needed as a step towards the self-realization which is expressed in the person's self-directed judgment...He has to accept it in this case because he thinks he is as he is seen, i. e., his judgment coincides with the judgment embodied in the observer-description...(or) although the judgments do not coincide, there is nevertheless something wrong in his being so seen (p. 65).

To be seen with approval "as wrong in his being so seen" is illustrated in Taylor's text with an example of an artist's model. A woman posing undressed for a painting or a sculpture suddenly becomes aware of the artist gazing approvingly upon her not as an artistic subject but as the object of sexual interest. Now the critical second point of view comes not from the artist but from "a sophisticated type of self-awareness" of the model herself (p. 67). The first point of view audience - the artist - approves, but the model, identifying with another view, "is seen as *being seen*...(and this) is to be in a position in which no decent woman would find herself" (p. 61). The model comes to realize that she has put herself in a position that elicits lust and a second audience viewpoint finds this type of approval to be contemptible. The model now identifies with a detached observation that sees the artist seeing her. This new perspective, the model comes to realize, illuminates a shameful component in the state of affairs.

> It is plainly a state of self-consciousness which centrally relies on the concept of another, for the thought for being seen as one might be seen by another is the catalyst for the emotion (p. 67).

All shame experiences, according to Taylor, share these three elements. For Taylor, as well as for Bernard Williams, this detached observer in the form of the second point of view audience need not be an actual person. Shame, Williams claims, "works for us" in essentially the same ways that it did for the ancient Greeks (p. 102).

> By giving through the emotions a sense of who one is and of what one hopes to be, it mediates between act, character, and consequence, and also between the ethical demands and the rest of life. Whatever it is working on, it requires an internalized other, who is not designated merely as a representative of an independently identified social group...(the internalized other moreover) embodies intimations of a genuine social reality...how it will be for one's life with others if one acts in one way rather than another (1993, p. 102).

With the notion of the detached observer, both Taylor and Williams recognize a shame type more sophisticated than the conventional idea of shame embodied in the conception of a shame culture. Williams invests shame with cognitive operations that transcend mere adjustments to the prejudices of one's community. Shame is more than "the individual's sense of what should be done merely on (the) expectations of what others will think of him or her" (p. 81). Feeling ashamed is more than being found out. With a connection to self-respect, Taylor considers shame conditionally good in that is an emotion of self-protection.

> We can characterize self-respect by reference to shame: if someone has self-respect then under certain ...conditions he will be feeling shame. A person has no self-respect if he regards no circumstances as shame-producing (1985, p. 80).

The sense of value necessary for self-respect and for shame is what Taylor considers "makes it clear why shame is...thought to be so valuable" (p. 80). In shame a person 1) retains her values, which 2) protects her from "corruption and ultimately extinction" (p. 81). If an agent's reasoning is correct and her values are right, a sense of shame will dissuade her from unethical alternatives or it will serve to direct her to future ethical conduct. In shame, Williams expresses the connection as a lowering of self-respect as an agent is diminished in her own eyes (1993). However, with regard to redirection Williams suggests "more positively, shame may be expressed in attempts to reconstruct or improve oneself" (p. 90). It is here that the analyses of Taylor and Williams will part company with the authors of the neutral and negative views.

Guilt has been alleged to imply restoration and repair (e.g., Fossum and Mason) as well as to be a developmentally more evolved emotion than shame (e.g., Erikson and Bradshaw). In contrasting guilt and shame, Williams persuasively implies both these views are mistaken. The dispute is complex; overlooking some of the fine points will detract from a possible defense of shame's conditionally good status. In order to argue for shame's restorative potential and as a powerful aid towards improvement, let us propose some final distinctions among the self-regarding emotions of guilt and shame gleaned from the positive view of Taylor and Williams.

Shame and Guilt Revisited

In A Theory of Justice, John Rawls proposes that a distinction between guilt and shame is expressed in what reactions an agent anticipates for his

behavior. Every commentator reviewed accepts this aspect of Rawls's position.

> (In guilt) he expects others to be resentful and indignant at his conduct, and he fears their righteous anger and the possibility of reprisal...(In shame) he is apprehensive lest they reject him and find him contemptible...In his behavior he has betrayed a lack of moral excellences he prizes and to which he aspires (1971, p. 445).

Rawls elaborates on this distinction. Guilt focuses on the infringement on others, on the specific injury that we cause, and on the expected reaction of resentment or indignation from the victim. In shame, we focus on our anxiety about the possible loss of respect we will merit if others were to reassess us and on "our disappointment with ourselves for failing to live up to our ideals" (p. 446). But what all the commentators from the neutral and negative views seem to miss in Rawls's position is that the restoration in guilt does not occur within the offender. It is primarily, if not entirely, an external restorative operation that intends to redistribute benefit to the victims. For in guilt our focus is on the victims and the element of their anger is explanatory and justified precisely because they have been wronged. In shame, by contrast, we focus on the internalization of an idealized figure "who shares the standards or expectations in terms of which (some act) is a failing" (Williams, 1993, p. 222). Rawls makes this point explicit.

> Guilt is relieved by reparations and the forgiveness that permits reconciliation; whereas shame is undone by proofs of defects made good, by a renewed confidence in the excellence of one's person (p. 484).

Clearly reparations and forgiveness must involve the persons (or person) that the agent has harmed. Reparations are due to them; the agent

hopes forgiveness is forthcoming from them. Reinstatement of the original relationship requires action, therefore, from both parties. Nothing in Rawls's remarks suggests this is necessarily required in shame. An agent fails to live up to moral excellences to which *he* aspires. Others may find him contemptible for, as Rawls suggests, lacking self-command "and its attendant excellences of strength, courage, and self-control" (p. 446). But, as even the negative view acknowledges, in shame no one need know of the failure. And secondly, when and if an agent is forgiven, Williams notes that "perhaps the case is withdrawn from the internal judge, but their forgiveness has less power to repair my sense of myself" (1993, p. 91). The injured party, through forgiveness, has the power to reinstate the offender. But, the injured party does not, in forgiving, reestablish the agent's sense of himself. Nor does the offending agent's act of reparation suggest improvement or even imply a renewed confidence on his part. Reparations, to be morally acceptable, ought to have the well-being of the injured party as the primary motivation.

On the point of the distinctive features of these two emotions, Williams has an instructive example of a moment of cowardice when we can feel both guilt and shame. We feel guilty for letting someone down and we feel shame for failing to live up to our conception of what we hope ourself to be or assumed to have been.

> (An) action stands between the inner world of disposition, feeling, and decision and an outer world of harm and wrong. *What I have done* points in one direction towards what has happened to others, in another direction to what I am (p. 93).

Shame looks to who the agent is, guilt looks to what the agent has done to others (Williams, 1993). Given this, Kekes's position that shame understands only success or failure looks to be all the more untenable. For

that which looks to who I am will understand intentions, aspirations, and desires as well as outcomes. Williams suggests that it is only when we come to understand our shame that we can properly understand our guilt.

> The structures of shame contain the possibility of controlling and learning from guilt, because they give a conception of one's ethical identity, in relation to which guilt can make sense. Shame can understand guilt, but guilt cannot understand itself (p. 93).

The Components of Moral Shame

Moral shame is a complex emotion. In its affective aspect it is a painful, self-regarding feeling wherein both the subject and the object of the emotion is the agent. In its cognitive aspect it is a detached comparison with an abstracted and idealized figure that renders a judgment that the agent has failed to approximate this better self. The cognitive component acknowledges that moral values are important and essential for living a good life together with the conviction that the agent could have and should have lived up to these values. In its moral aspect it is the cognitive recognition that the agent has failed to perform an ethically correct alternative that an abstracted, better self would have performed. And in the component of desire, moral shame is the willing to better approximate the conception of the better self on future occasions.

An Answer to Research Question #1

In the form of a definition, the answer to the first research question, "What is the emotion of moral shame?" reads:

S1: X is moral shame = df. X is a painful, self-regarding feeling of diminishment that acknowledges an agent has failed to live up to some value. That value the agent: 1) regards as important; 2) considers it to constitute an essential component of living a good life; 3) acknowledges it to be a value to which he ought to aspire; and, 4) one that a better self would have more closely approximated.

Chapter Summary

Many authors allude to an overlap of features in the various self-regarding emotions (Dillon, 1995; Goleman, 1995; Karen, 1992; Kekes, 1988, 1993; Isenberg, 1980; Rawls, 1971; etc.) Kekes, for example, has written shame "shades into" the emotions of embarrassment, humiliation, guilt, regret, and remorse (1988, p 283). But this literature review and the arguments it has produced have pinpointed specific differences. These differences are important in the consideration of the second research question: " What impact might moral shame have upon one's character development?" This section, then, will conclude with a brief review of a few of the conclusions reached in this second chapter concerning specific differences between moral shame and the other relevant self-regarding emotions.

Of all the self-regarding emotions, shame is, on occasion, most easily confused with guilt and humiliation. It is hoped the comments regarding guilt drew some clear differences. A frequent mistake, especially in educational circles, is the use of humiliation synonymously with shame. And humiliation is an emotion that elicits among educators - to borrow from Kierkegaard - fear and trembling. This seems justified. It seems true that in a great majority of cases it is both indefensible and morally offensive to humiliate a child. But, it also can and will be argued: if shame is conditionally good, then to instill in a child a sense of shame is a moral responsibility both for parents and for educational caretakers. But this does not imply that with

for parents and for educational caretakers. But this does not imply that with shame one ought to be oblivious to precautions.

Humiliation, it was proposed, involves a fall. As with shame, some type of audience is involved. But the function of the audience in humiliation is more direct than it need be in shame; it necessarily consists of identifiable others. In humiliation, some outside party alerts the agent to the fact that his self-assessment is considered by these others to be unjustifiably inflated. A teacher would humiliate a student if, for example, she were to inform him that he does not have the comprehensive grasp of a subject he pretends to have. If this is done in front of the class and also with an air of sarcastic condescension, it can be all the more devastating. The student feels deflated, for the audience, whatever its composition, transmits the message that they do not share the assessment of the elevated position the student has assigned to himself. Taylor distinguishes the essential difference of humiliation with shame to be the fall, rather than "the new degraded status" in shame (p. 67). The student might redeem himself by exhibiting the required knowledge, but until he does he will feel contemptible or ludicrous for having given the appearance of presumptuousness.

Embarrassment has been defined as an emotional reaction to a situation of less serious magnitude. It is primarily in response to the inability to respond to the demands of an audience. An agent will feel tension and confusion; the proper response to the immediate demand alludes him. In the above example, the student's humiliation can be compounded by embarrassment. He may in fact know his subject, but flustered by the teacher's confrontation and his classmate's attention, he freezes. But embarrassment is usually in response to lighter situations as when I hit my thumb with a hammer or I arrive at a party with a tear in my pants.

Taylor further distinguishes shame, humiliation, and embarrassment by the extent of their influence upon one's self-esteem or upon one's self-respect. Since embarrassment is an adverse judgment only on an agent in a given situation, it need not effect either self-esteem or self-respect. After hitting my thumb with the hammer or building an unsquare frame, I can think of no quick, appropriate, and redeeming response to the jeers of my week-end carpenter friends. But, it would be illogical for me to consider a global reassessment of myself for this momentary and inconsequential carelessness. Self-effacing humor will quiet the jeers. They will be reminded, afterall, I am only a week-end carpenter.

Shame and humiliation impact upon one's status. In explaining how these emotions affect one's status, Taylor attaches humiliation to self-esteem and shame to self-respect. Humiliation, for Taylor, is a blow to one's self-esteem. In order to be humiliated Taylor claims: 1) a person must have a favorable attitude prior to the attack, or, 2) a person will believe he does not get the recognition he should (1985). He, therefore, believes he deserves more than that which he receives. A blow to self-esteem "is an occasion primarily for humiliation rather than for shame, for he may not therefore also think that he is worth less than he thought" (1985, p. 78).

Shame, according to Tayor, connects with self-respect for a person may feel shame regardless of whether he or she holds a favorable or unfavorable self-regarding attitude.

> The self-respecting person has certain views of what is due him and from him...He will lack self-respect if he has no such views, and he will lose his self-respect if the relevant expectations are not fulfilled. But the frustration of his expectations...is precisely the occasion for feeling shame: he will feel shame if he becomes aware of his expectations are being frustrated (p. 80).

Taylor is correct to take issue with the Rawlsian notion that self-esteem and self-respect are synonymous. But attaching humiliation to self-esteem seems unhelpful. The features of humiliation which serve to distinguish it from shame are the fall and the verdict of presumptuousness. Unlike worth-shame, both these attach to appearances. Accordingly, one cannot be humiliated without a specific, identifiable audience.

A second problem with Taylor's analysis of humiliation is suggested by the fact that if an agent does not agree with the verdict, he will not feel humiliated. Anger seems a more reasonable reaction. It seems unlikely a person will feel humiliated on the basis of a view from an audience that the agent deems incapable of assessing his true talents. This fact seems to be largely overlooked in the literature. Shame, on the other hand, can be protective of one's values and aspirations above and beyond appearances or a third-party confirmation.

> To respect the self, then, is not to think either favorably or unfavorably of the self, but is rather to do that which protects the self from injury or destruction, just as to respect others is not to think well or badly of them, but is at least to abstain from injuring or destroying them...And shame is the emotion of self-protection: it may prevent the person concerned from putting himself into a certain position, or make him aware that he ought not to be in the position in which he finds himself (p. 81).

This notion seems correct. It is a one description of a sense of shame. Whether the leading theories of moral education accommodate this insight is the topic of the next chapter.

CHAPTER 4

REVIEW OF MORAL EDUCATION PROGRAMS

Introduction

One contribution of philosopher John Dewey was to pose some fundamental questions that all teachers, as teachers, should contemplate. Dewey considered these questions to be of primary importance: "What should be taught?", "How do children learn?", and, "What type of society do we wish to live in?" (Scharf, 1978).

To arrive at satisfactory answers would seem to require input, at a minimum, from professional educators, curriculum specialists, developmental psychologists, philosophers, sociologists, and politicians. As is to be expected, the various responses to Dewey's complex questions have been conflicting. One particularly contentious area, implied in Dewey's questions, has been the effort to teach values in public schools. This is not surprising when one considers the multicultural composition and the ideological diversity that is America.

An answer to this papers' second research question, "What impact might moral shame have on character development?" touches upon all of Dewey's questions for educators. To assess what impact shame might have upon a person requires each respondent to have a preconceived notion of how moral character develops (or, "How do children learn?") as well as to hold certain beliefs regarding what constitutes a mature and ideal moral character (and an "ideal society"). So, the objectives and content of moral education

programs (or, "What should be taught?"), as in all educational endeavors, ought to be guided by a clear conception of the desired goal.

Regarding moral education programs, logic requires that a theorist has some concept of virtue and of vice prior to advancing a proposal on how to facilitate sound moral development. Here the notion of an ideal character, and/or "What type of society do we wish to live in?" should contextually guide the answer to "What should be taught?".

In this chapter five theories of moral development - and the role of moral shame within these theories - will be reviewed. The review of the literature on moral education theories and programs reveals an initial difficulty: objectives and goals vary. And this is because there is theoretical disagreement as to what constitutes a mature, moral character. Since each theory has a different conception of character development, it follows practical methods will vary accordingly as will the theoretical views on shame's role in the development of character. A review of these theories will illuminate what significance shame has for each theorist.

Disagreements over the proper methodology and the proper goal can, roughly, be classified within one of two general schools of thought.

When an American public school considers incorporating the teaching of values into the curriculum, there are essentially two general approaches from which to choose. The school community may elect a "character education" model or a "cognitive-developmental" model. These approaches differ conceptually and practically.

Theoretically, character education holds that virtue can be taught, that good models are essential for moral development and that the young are not appropriate candidates for Socratic dialogues. Practically, teachers must "impose" specific values to ensure the development of proper habits. This is to

be done prior to, not necessarily concurrent with, intellectual rationalizations. Virtually every leading theorist in character education refers to or directly quotes Aristotle on the importance of good habits. One passage - often quoted - from the Nicomachean Ethics reads:

> (L)ike activities produce like dispositions. Hence we must give our activities a certain quality, because it is their characteristics that determine the resulting dispositions. So it is a matter of no little importance what sort of habits we form from the earliest age - it makes a vast difference, or rather all the difference in the world (Trans. Thompson, 1953, p. 92).

This passage - and similar arguments that support an indoctrinative approach - are dismissed as misguided by the cognitive-developmentalists. The two most popular branches within this school are Lawrence Kohlberg's stage development theory and Sidney Simon's Value Clarification theory.

Although distinctly different in many of their basic assumptions, both methods share a distrust for the development of habits through "indoctrination" or imposing upon the young a "bag of virtues". Advocates of these theories often contend that "habituation" is the transmission of values that are not applicable in modern times while others object that indoctrination usurps autonomous self-direction. In further contrast with character education, these theories also enthusiastically endorse Socratic dialogues with children when these exchanges are modified to be age appropriate. The Values Clarification theory further suggests that these dialogues are to be conducted in an atmosphere of nonjudgmental acceptance for each and every view expressed.

Although moral education programs in public schools have been primarily influenced by one of these two schools of thought, educators do not have the luxury of an simple either / or choice among the practical

applications of these methods. The values clarification theory demonstrates that an influential theory can evolve from one of these schools of thought, yet it will, in the suggested form of implementation, display little resemblance to fellow approaches. It follows that the assigned significance and role of shame can be decidedly different in theories sharing the same initial theoretical orientation.

The format of this section begins with a review of the most influential theories from these two schools of thought. The order of the theories to be reviewed will be: 1) the indoctrinative model, 2) the cognitive-developmental model as formulated by Jean Piaget, 3) the values clarification method, 4) the moral stage development theory of Lawrence Kohlberg, and, finally 5) the character education model. Following each section with be a short exposition on: 1) the perceived shortcomings of each approach, 2) how shame appears to be accommodated within each of these theories, and, 3) how each theory would answer the question "What impact might shame have on character development?". The section concludes with an alternative conception of moral development which will serve as an answer to the second research question.

The Indoctrinative Model

Early in the nineteenth century the majority of the public schools adopted an indoctrinative approach to moral education (Scharf, 1978; Bennett, 1993; Brooks & Goble, 1997). An indoctrinative model attempted to teach specific values to children through literature, lecture, practice, and example. Readings from the McGuffey Reader, "which by 1919 had the largest circulation of any book except the Bible", carried lessons of moral virtues such as honesty and courage (Kilpatrick, 1992, p. 99). One reviewer of

the McGuffey text observes the qualities of character referenced and supported most frequently were charity, industriousness, kindness, patriotism, and piety (Beach, 1992). In the McGuffey Reader, young children were introduced, unapologetically, to values held to be universally true.

> Always do to other children as you wish them to do to you. This is the Golden Rule. So remember it when you play. Act upon it now, and when you are grown up, do not forget it (cited in Lickona, 1992, p. 235).

Moral education held a central role in the curriculum of nineteenth century American public schools (Beach, 1992). The influential educational reformer, Horace Mann, advocated a public school curriculum that "sought to form a sincere piety directed toward the Creator, (and) a morality based upon the example and ideas of Jesus Christ and conducive to civic peace and social righteousness" (Beach, 1992, p. 12).

Support was also garnered for this approach from social institutions and clubs for children. The Boy Scouts of America, founded in 1910, established this now familiar oath: A scout is trustworthy, loyal, helpful, friendly, courteous, kind, obedient, cheerful, thrifty, brave, clean, and reverent. A good scout, it is explicitly clear, is defined by a conformity to these specific values.

A basic tenet of indoctrinative instruction was that stories of virtuous conduct helped to mold good children. Stories, such as "Jim and the Thief" from the *McGuffey Reader,* provided children with examples of acceptable and unacceptable conduct which were intended to stimulate their moral imagination. These stories, it was believed, began the work of emotionally attaching children to goodness (Kilpatrick, 1994). These insights have their roots in Plato and Aristotle. Plato wrote that children ought not hear stories "fashioned by any chance teachers and so to take into their minds

opinions...contrary to those that we shall think desirable for them to hold when they are grown up" (Republic, II, 378b, p. 624). Aristotle, we will recall, believed that the habits learned early make "all the difference in the world".

Penmanship exercises in public school also carried clear moral lessons. In The Case for Character Education, author B. D. Brooks lists these sentences that children were instructed to copy twenty times.

> Quarrelsome persons are always dangerous companions.
> Great men were good boys.
> Justice is a common right.
> Wit should never wound.
> Build your hopes of fame on virtue.
> Zeal for justice is worthy of praise (1997, p. 13).

Many students of the indoctrinative approach were also familiar with the list of virtues that Ben Franklin composed in order to self-monitor his own behavior. His list included the following: temperance, silence, order, frugality, industry, sincerity, justice, moderation, cleanliness, tranquility, chastity, and humility (Scharf, 1978).

Three essential features distinguish the indoctrinative model. Indoctrinative educators share the basic assumptions that the values that they promote will serve their students well and these values will be as valid in the future as they are in the present and as they have been in the past. For example, indoctrinative educators believed that the truth value of "Honesty is the best policy" would hold constant for future generations.

Second, in the nature / nurture debate, indoctrinative educators hold the nurture dimension at a premium. Inculcation, modeling, rewards and punishment, and repetition are highly regarded. Virtues are learned through practice and while in the formative stages, children ought not be granted the license to debate established wisdom. Following Plato, indoctrinative educators believe those children who engage in Socratic dialogues lack the

formative background, the skills, and the developed habits to benefit by such exchanges. These young debaters will "delight like puppies in pulling about and tearing with words" (Republic,VII, 539b, p. 771). They will not, however, necessarily acquire the virtues by debating either the value of the virtues in general or the specific application of them in particular and/or thorny cases.

Third, morality is defined by the specific values and rules that are current within a specific society. Early American educators, for example, attempted to indoctrinate their students with values that may have been far different than those that had currency, for instance, in Germany or in China. Educators from all these regions, however, could legitimately be classified as indoctrinative. So one condition of a value need not be that it satisfy the requirement of universal application. Indoctrinative educators "define morality in terms of moral rules, values, and virtues of a particular society at a particular point in history" (Scharf, 1978, p. 23).

In the practical application of the indoctrinative model, clear answers to Dewey's questions emerge. What should be taught included moral values. Among the specific values that had societal approval in America were: piety, kindness, courage, patriotism, obedience, justice, honesty, humility, and moderation. An ideal society would be composed of citizens that exemplified these virtues.

Presumably an indoctrinative educator would answer queries about how children learn by claiming the primary importance of good example and the development of good habits. Examples would come from one's family, the townspeople, the clergy, and one's teachers as well as from carefully selected literature. It was a common assumption that these lessons could be absorbed without the active participation or extended group dialogues involving the children. The saying "Children should be seen and not heard" held in schools.

As in libraries, it would not be unusual for early American classrooms to display a sign which read "Silence".

Shame and the Indoctrinative Model

A common image of an early American educator is one of a strict disciplinarian, hickory switch in hand, looming over his cowering and compliant students. Other images are of dunce caps, red knuckles, and standing in the corner of the classroom facing the wall. Essential elements in these various forms of punishment were that the public disgrace and personal shame felt by the student could be justified by being effective incentives to learn and to become good children and citizens.

Punishment itself is a practice usually justified in one of two ways: deterrence or retribution. Roughly, deterrence is forward-looking. One might claim that in punishment one intends to provide an individual with an incentive not to recommit a crime. Pain of punishment and shame, as with all pain, is thought to be something all rational people attempt to avoid.

On a community level, deterrence hopes to dissuade others, often by example, from committing a crime in the first place. Some writers consider the latter purpose to be sufficient justification. In Punishing Criminals, Ernest van der Haag suggests one view of punishment is that it can be inflicted on someone solely for the benefit of others.

> Deterrence protects the social order by restraining not the actual offender, who *eo ipso*, has not been deterred, but other members of society, potential offenders, who still can be deterred. As an English judge succinctly remarked: "Men are not hanged for stealing horses, but that horses may not be stolen" (van der Haag, 1975, pp. 60-61).

In contrast to deterrence, retribution is backward-looking. Retribution seeks to impose the amount of suffering an offender deserves simply for having committed an infraction. By virtue of some past offense, a person merits punishing. Providing an example to others, rehabilitation, and incentives to conform need not be motivating reasons for retributive punishment. In retribution the principle is simple: justice is served when an individual receives what he deserves.

Shaming students, on the early American indoctrinative model, could range over all three justificatory punishing practices. The offending student deserved censure for an infraction and it was hoped the punishment would dissuade both the individual and his classmates from similar future conduct. For the common good, rules and values, having been clearly established, were to be observed. Since these values constituted the ideal or "the better self", any instance of falling short could occasion punishment. If a child had internalized this ideal, he would feel shame for having fallen short in addition to the inevitable humiliation that accompanied his public reprimand.

In the twentieth century, the indoctrinative moral education model began to fall into disfavor for a variety of reasons. Chief among the objections were that it was unduly harsh, that it was disrespectful of the intrinsic dignity of persons, that it was an unsound educational practice, that it relegated students to that of passive receptacles (Dewey,1953), and that it did not work (Simon, 1972). Indoctrination's reliance on conventionalism was also faulted as philosophically unsound. Opponents correctly observed that an act is not morally right simply by virtue of it being permitted by society. Clearly, societies have, at various times throughout history, legally endorsed morally objectionable practices as permissible (e.g., segregation).

Precisely when in the twentieth century this change began is not certain. It is widely assumed that the change came abruptly in the 1960s. This assumption appears to neglect the facts. Sociologist James Q. Wilson notes that the emphasis on character development began to shift much earlier.

> In the 1920s, dramatic cultural changes began. The temperance movement became discredited and conservative religion lost ground. Professor Wilson...notes that from 1890 to 1910, about one-third of the (popular magazine) articles about child-rearing...dealt with character development. In 1920, only 3% had this focus. By 1930, personality development was the dominant theme of the women's magazines (Christenson, 1996).

Another dramatic change began in the 1920s with the publication of Yale University psychologists Hugh Hartshorne and Mark May extensive study of children's moral behavior. Their findings suggested that the behavior of children ultimately depends upon their immediate and particular circumstance. Children who professed to have honest characters were found to be guilty of stealing, cheating, and lying in circumstances of apparent low risk (Lickona, 1992). These findings prompted Hartshorne and May to propose the "doctrine of specificity": human behavior is variable and dependent upon the situation and not predictable by virtue of someone's apparent settled disposition or professed values.

Other dramatic scientific proposals in the early part of the century that affected the confidence of people in the validity of conventional values were Darwinism and Einstein's theory of relativity. Behavioral adaptation by evolutionary means and Einstein's thesis about physical matter were both extrapolated to influence morality. As a result of these scientific theories, a far greater sympathy for ethical relativism began to pervade America.

Established religions, that supported public school moral education efforts, also experienced internal reforms prior to 1960.

> The theologian Richard John Neuhaus thinks that shame faded away not in the moral relativism of the 1960s, as is usually argued, but in the Pollyannaish 1950s, when spiritual leaders like Norman Vincent Peale argued you could have the positive side without the negative, which is philosophically and practically impossible (Alter and Wingert, 1995, p. 22).

The indoctrinative approach was also subjected to assault from psychologists and educational scholars. By 1960, the innovative work of Jean Piaget had garnered a large and devoted audience. Expanding upon his work in the 1970s, Sidney Simon and Lawrence Kohlberg would advance their theories of moral development. These later theories were a direct and a harsh assault on the indoctrinative theory. Let us turn now to these three educational theories.

Jean Piaget

Swiss psychologist Jean Piaget revolutionalized the study of child psychology. Piaget's primary focus was on the process of the acquisition of knowledge or the development of cognitive intelligence. Originally trained as a biologist, Piaget developed an interest in psychology when, early in his career, he was employed in the Binet Laboratory in Paris. Piaget's primary task was to develop and administer French versions of several standardized tests, among them the famous Binet intelligence test (now titled the Stanford - Binet) (Wadsworth, 1989).

Piaget soon tired of his assigned work on standardized tests. Recording a child's correct answers might indicate how much a child knows, but, for Piaget, the patterns emerging from wrong answers suggested to him a field of study far more intriguing. From the patterns and the content of wrong answers he was receiving, Piaget observed that as children mature they employ more sophisticated forms of reasoning. Piaget came to believe that cognitive development is a "process of successive qualitative changes of cognitive structures, each structure...deriving logically and inevitably from the preceding one" (Wadsworth, 1989, p. 24). One insight that lead to this conclusion was that early on in his research Piaget observed that problems that seemed insurmountable for children at one age were solved with relative ease by children at a later age (Hersh, et. al., 1982).

To understand the process of reasoning children employ, Piaget developed the "clinical method" of inquiry. Unlike the one word or short phrase responses elicited by standardized tests, Piaget posed problems to children. He then, through an interview-type format, could observe and record the child's approach to specific problems. Observations, dialogues, and clarifying questions were the hallmarks of the clinical method and this approach substantially influenced the methodology later employed by Simon and Kohlberg.

Piaget concluded that the "fundamental differences in the way children reason are age-related" (Hersh, p. 19). Broadly summarized, the Piagetian stages of cognitive development are as follows:

1. The *stage of sensori-motor intelligence* (0 - 2 years). During this stage, behavior is primarily motor. The child does not yet internally represent events and "think" conceptually, though "cognitive" development is seen as schemata constructed.

2. The *stage of preoperational thought* (2 - 7 years). This stage is characterized by the development of language and other forms of representation and rapid conceptual development. Reasoning during this stage is prelogical or semilogical.

3. The *stage of concrete operations* (7 - 11 years) During these years, the child develops the ability to apply logical thought to concrete problems.

4. The *stage of formal operations* (11 - 15 years or older). During this stage, the child's cognitive structures reach their greatest level of development, and the child becomes able to apply logical reasoning to all classes of problems (Wadsworth, 1989, p. 25).

From his training in biology, Piaget brought to psychology an awareness of an individual's cognitive and affective development as one that is strongly influenced by one's environment. Piaget's theory is predicated on assumptions of knowledge as the assimilation of environmental stimuli, the cognitive organization or "accommodation" of environmental stimuli and demands, and the "equilibrium" or disequilibrium of these two elements (Hersh, 1982; Wadsworth, 1989).

> The mind does not simply absorb discrete data...rather the mind "seeks" to organize itself. It seeks from the environment specifically relevant information that it can "use" to "construct" a system of order that makes sense of, and thereby enhances, interaction with the world (Hersh, 1989, p. 24).

Cognitive development, for Piaget, requires four variables: direct experience, the level of exposure to environmental factors, the social transmission of new ideas through, for example, reading and instruction, and equilibration, or the ability to usefully structure information and experience (assimilation and accommodation). Although not everyone may achieve the level of formal operations, all children, Piaget claims, invariably progress through the stages in the standard order.

In many respects, Piaget's theory of moral development parallels his theory of cognitive development. Admittedly, the majority of Piaget's years of research were devoted to cognitive development, but he did, with his characteristic ingenuity, research and formulate a theory of moral development.

Affective development, for Piaget, is inseparable from cognitive development. In agreement with the notion that emotions are comprised of cognitive components, Piaget has written, "It is impossible to find behavior arising from affectivity alone without any cognitive element" (1981, p. 2). Equally impossible is it to find behavior solely comprised of cognitive elements.

Affectivity ranges over feelings, interests, desires, tendencies, values, and emotions (Wadsworth, 1989) and its connection with cognition, for Piaget, is straightforward. The student who likes science is more apt to do well in science. The one who does not will be at a disadvantage.

Since intelligence was for Piaget comprised of cognitive and affective dimensions, it is not surprising to find that Piaget had these two aspects developing along similar time lines. A comparison of the stages of cognitive and affective growth is seen below.

Cognitive stage	Moral stage
Preoperational (2 to 7 years)	Egocentric (4 to 7 years)
Concrete (7 to 11 years)	Incipient Cooperation (7 to 11 years)
Formal (11 - 15 and on)	Genuine Cooperation (11 - 12 and on)

According to Piaget, preoperational children are characterized in the cognitive and affective realms by egocentrism. Supposedly, an egocentric child cannot take the role, or empathize, with others and the child believes that his perception of an event is the perception all others share. (Wadsworth,

1989). Conflicting views to his are disregarded as incorrect. Children at this stage speak in self-contained monologues and they play group games relatively unaffected and uncomprehending of standardized rules (Ginsburg and Opper, 1988).

At the egocentric moral stage, children believe rules are absolute in nature and are handed down from some higher authority figure - one's father or mother, God, or the government.

> The child's morality...is one of obedience, what Piaget called *unilateral respect*. Preoperational children do not reason about what is right or wrong. For them, what is right or wrong is predetermined (by authority) and not subject to their own evaluation. There is little cooperation in the social sense - there is only obedience (Wadsworth, 1989, p. 108).

From his study of children at play, Piaget concluded that rules, to children at the egocentric stage, are believed to be unalterable. The child may be aware that he is unable to explain why certain rules are in effect; he will simply explain an authority figure has established and will enforce them (Ginsburg and Opper, 1988). Good and bad are determined by behavior that accords or conflicts with these rules. "Any act that shows obedience to a rule or even to an adult...is good", Piaget writes, "and the good, therefore, is rigidly defined by obedience" (1965, p. 111). 'Good' as obedience is justified by the child's belief that his parents or the authority figures are "omniscient, omnipresent...the source both of the uniformity of nature and of the laws of morality" (p. 375). Piaget succinctly summarizes the egocentric stage as a "blind faith in adult authority" (p. 402).

Violations of the rules are measured or assessed in "real" terms - the extent of the damage done. Piaget's "moral realism" theory postulates that egocentric children do not consider guilt to be moderated by subjective intentions or motives. The child who breaks 15 teacups while trying to help

his mother is guilty of a more serious transgression than is the child that deliberately breaks one. Minor accidents, according to Piaget, overwhelm children with a sense of guilt that is "proportional to the extent of the material disaster instead of remaining subordinate to the intentions in question" (1965, p. 136). Guilt and shame, at the preoperational or egocentric level, will be "more burning...the more irreparable the damage" (1965, p. 136).

As a child matures, moral realism gives way to the *incipient cooperation* stage. Now a child begins to be able to factor in motivation, intentions, and the spirit of the law rather than a simple adherence to the letter of the law. Rules are perceived as a mutually agreed-upon framework for activities and the child is becoming more capable of interacting with others linguistically and behaviorally (Wadsworth, 1989).

Genuine cooperation, beginning at about 11 years of age, parallels the cognitive "formal operations" stage. At this level of development the child begins to perform abstract operations with rules.

> He enjoys settling differences of opinion concerning the rules, inventing new rules, and elaborating on them...He finds that not everyone accepts the views promulgated by his parents (Ginsberg, p. 101).

Piaget continues and, at this juncture, makes an rather startling inference.

> (As a result) the child reasons about rules and comes to the conclusion that they must, to some extent, be arbitrary and, therefore, changeable...The child (begins) to see rules as having a human, and hence fallible, origin, and (he) agrees to participate in their formation and alteration (p. 101).

In that the incipient cooperation stage seems to be one of transition, some commentators understand the Piagetian model of moral development to involve only two distinct stages. Ginsburg and Opper summarize Piaget's theory on moral development to suggest that children begin at an "absolutistic" stage characterized by a "morality of constraint" (1988, p.99). The central principle of a morality of constraint is: x is right if x accords with adult commands. As a child matures this stage gives way to an autonomous stage or "a morality of cooperation". The revised guiding principle for this stage will now read: x is right if x accords with society's commands or agreements. And, according to Piaget, society is to be understood as containing the child as an emerging participant in the formation of these commands.

> During the (egocentric) stage, rules are regarded as sacred...emanating from adults and lasting forever...During the (genuine cooperation) stage, a rule is looked upon as a law due to mutual consent, which you must respect if you want to be loyal but which it is permissible to alter on the condition of enlisting general opinion on your side (p. 28).

A two-stage theory agrees with the view of Exile Durkheim, a philosopher Piaget held in high regard. Referencing Durkheim, Piaget notes:

> Durkheim's ethical teaching, "which strikes so sincere a note...imbued with such a deeply scientific spirit...regards all morality as imposed by the group upon the individual and by the adult upon the child" (p. 341).

As we will see, Piaget's views on cooperation and self-regulation (autonomy) strongly influenced the theories of moral development introduced by Sidney Simon and Lawrence Kohlberg.

Shame in Piaget's Theory

The majority of Piaget's research efforts and writings concerned cognitive development, and although there were parallels, his theory of moral development was far less intricate. Guilt and shame, in Piaget's work, were rarely mentioned outside the brief references to moral realism. As mentioned, moral realism suggests a child, under a morality of constraint, feels guilt and shame in direct proportion to the actual, physical damage that results from some action by the child.

Presumably, as a child matures, possible circumstances for feeling shame will increase under the morality of cooperation. Since Piaget evidently believes "society...is the only source of morality" (1965, p. 327), occasions for shame will arise when one fails to conform to agreed upon social commands or when one violates social prohibitions. The field of authority figures to whom the egocentric child holds himself accountable now expands at the genuine cooperation stage to entail obligations to the general community. A communal obligation is not synonymous with a blind obedience to convention. Individuals at stages of concrete and formal operations are active and autonomous participants in the formation of the binding obligations.

> A rule is...nothing but the condition for the existence of a social group; and if to the individual conscience rules seem to be charged with obligation, this is because communal life alters the very structure of consciousness by inculcating into it the feeling of respect (p. 101).

As egocentrism is displaced by cooperation, Piaget's mature individual actively participates in the construction of his own social world.

> Autonomy means being governed by oneself, not by others. Autonomy of reasoning is reasoning according to one's own constructed set of norms. It evaluates rather than automatically accepts the preformed values of others. In addition, autonomous reasoning considers others as well as the self. Autonomy is *self-regulation* (Wadsworth, 1989, p. 108).

But Piaget's view of a mature individual has some definite and restrictive parameters. Since his work has been so influential to the originators of the Value Clarification method and to Lawrence Kohlberg - methods to which we turn next - these restrictions deserve attention.

In Dialogues with Children, Garth Matthews offers several probing and original criticisms of Piaget's work. One concern Matthews has centers on the field of evidence Piaget allows in his effort to assess a child's development. It is natural, Matthews notes, "to conceive developmental psychology on a biological model, where a mature specimen is taken as the standard toward which the immature individual develops" (1992, p. 117). Having a conception of the mature specimen allows a scientist to gauge the progress and assess the developmental stage of specific individuals.

Matthews offers persuasive evidence to suggest that Piaget's investigations discount the natural philosophical inquisitiveness of children.[16] With numerous examples, Matthews verifies instances wherein Piaget shows a remarkable lack of interest in some of the philosophically provocative answers children offer in the clinical interviews. For a researcher who began his investigations inspired by "wrong" answers on standardized tests, this is particularly puzzling. Equally perplexing is the fact that the clinical interview was specifically formulated to allow a flexibility in responses and in the follow-up questioning.

[16] See, for example, Philosophy and the Young Child, Chapter 4, pp. 37 - 53.

Piaget seemed uncharacteristically rigid when confronted by philosophical puzzlement and religious convictions. For example, those children who believe God intervenes in their lives are considered to labor under a misconception of "artificialism", an inability to attribute all occurrences to natural processes (Ginsburg and Opper, 1988). In instances where a child expects punishment to be imposed by divine intervention, the clinical interview halts abruptly.

> The subjects who answer "God did it" should immediately be put aside...It seems quite natural to the child that a fault should automatically bring about its own punishment. For nature, in a child's eyes, is not a system of blind forces regulated by mechanical laws operating on the principle of chance. Nature is a harmonious whole, obeying laws that are as much moral as physical (1965, p. 256).

By discounting philosophical inquiry coupled with the assumption that religious convictions impede development toward autonomous, formal operations, Piaget's clinical interviewing method overlooked many of the possible investigative avenues into the moral life and thought of children. Any egocentric-stage child who views nature as a harmonious whole seems a likely candidate for engaging conversation. In Piaget's method, these dialogues never materialize. More importantly, it is not clear that every child will or ought to have absolutistic views supplanted by the view that society is the source of all morality. The objection can be raised that Piaget had things the wrong way around: some "mature specimens" come to believe that only those social rules are valid if they reflect universal and absolute truths.

With the uncritical adoption of many of Piaget's ideas, Values Clarification brought a secular and highly flawed theory of moral development into the public schools.

Sidney Simon

In the preface of Values and Teaching: Second Edition written by Louis Raths, Sidney Simon and Merrill Harming, (hereafter referred to as Simon) the authors exclaim that "hundreds and hundreds of schools and school districts" have used their first edition published in 1966 (1978, p. viii). This claim seems modest. In "Ethics Without Virtue", Christina Hoff Summers cites a Hoover Institute study which reports that as of 1975 perhaps thousands of school programs employ the values clarification method (VC) and "ten states have officially adopted values clarification as a model for their moral education programs" (1984, p. 290).

There are several reasons for VC's past popularity. Its main tenets can be explained within the time constraints of short term workshop settings. After these workshops, teachers can easily implement the practice of the theory - with a minimum of study - when they return to their classrooms. And the several books published by Simon contain hundreds of classroom activities that are easy to implement with a minimum of preparation. As of 1978 with the publication of the second edition, Simon claims "we are only able to say that the need is even greater than it was a decade ago" (Simon, 1978, p. viii). The urgency seems to be this:

> The children and youth of today are confronted by many more choices than in previous generations. They are surrounded by a bewildering array of alternatives. Modern society has made them less provincial and more sophisticated, but the complexity of these times has made the act of choosing infinitely more difficult (p. 15).

The external pressures that confront children according to Simon include: single parent families, increased mobility and the geographical separation of extended families, international unrest, the exposure to a seemingly infinite number of opinions, and endless technological changes (1978). These and other external factors make value decisions such a complicated process.

> As a consequence, some people flounder in confusion, apathy, or inconsistency. They cannot get clear on their values. They cannot find patterns for themselves that are *purposeful* (p. 4).

Due to both the complexity of modern times and the exposure to so many divergent viewpoints, more and more children experience problems "of deciding what is good and what is right and what is desirable" (p. 10). Simon lists as a sample of the divergent opinions to which children are exposed to include those of parents, the church, peers, Hollywood, radical spokespersons, and cumulative effect of all of one's teachers (1972, p. 16).

The rationale for a new public school method of moral education is that "Until recently clear procedures based on adequate theory have not been available" (p. 12.) Simon explicitly states that the practical application of all other previous value theories have failed to establish the necessary clarity in less complicated times; these theories are, therefore, ill-suited to address these complex modern times.

Simon lists specific approaches that will be ineffective. These are:

1. Setting an example either directly, by the way adults behave, or indirectly, by pointing to good models.
2. Persuading and convincing by presenting arguments and reasons for this or that set of values and by pointing to the fallacies and pitfalls of other sets of values.

3. Limiting choices by giving children choices only among values "we" accept.
4. Inspiring by dramatic or emotional pleas for certain values often accompanied by models of behavior associated with the value.
5. Rules and regulations intended to contain and mold behavior until it is unthinkingly accepted as right as through the use of rewards and punishments to reinforce certain behavior.
6. Using the arts and literature...to model and promote what "always has been" and what "should be".
7. Cultural and religious dogma presented as unquestioned wisdom.
8. Appeals to conscience...that we assume is within the heart of everyone; often used with the arousing of feelings of guilt...such as...he shamed his parents (p. 41).

This is clearly an attack on the indoctrinative method. Not only does Simon explicitly assert that these approaches are poorly suited for the development of values in present times, but the claim continues that there is clear evidence that they have *always* been ineffective.

> (These) methods *do not seem to have resulted in deep commitments of any sort*...They just do not seem to work very well. This alone suggests that we should try a new approach (pgs. 41 - 42).

There should be no dispute with Simon over his descriptive analysis of certain features of modern times. He correctly recognizes that modern life is "complex"; children are indeed exposed to a wide variety of "value conflicts" in politics, religion, work, family configurations, matters of sexuality, and in sources of authority.

According to Simon, such a descriptive portrayal of modern life ought to suffice to discredit all the approaches that advocate "inculcation". His reasoning seems to be as follows: The "direct inculcation of values works best when there is complete consistency" in what constitutes "desirable" values (p. 42). Since a descriptive portrayal of modern life clearly shows a lack of any

consensus, value methods that incorporate inculcation will be ineffective. Inculcation (or indoctrination) is further discredited by stifling " free inquiry, thoughtfulness, (and) reason" (p. 42). Blind adherence to existing societal norms, Simon correctly observes, has its dangers. But this starting point leads Simon to an extreme conclusion. Following the Piagetian notion that cognitive and moral development is characterized by the emergence of autonomous self-regulation, Simon's value clarification method entrusts children with decision-making authority almost entirely unencumbered by adult intervention. This point is verified by the goal of the theory which is clearly articulated on the back cover of Values Clarification.

> The goal is to involve students in practical experiences, making them aware of *their* own feelings, *their* own ideas, *their* own beliefs, so that the choices and decisions they make are conscious and deliberate, based on *their own* value systems (1978, dust cover).

People grow and learn, Simon writes, through experience.

> Since we see values as growing from a person's experiences, we would expect that different experiences would give rise to different values and that any one person's values would be modified as those experiences accumulate and change (p. 26).

If values evolve from experience and these experiences offer new or different insights, it is to be expected that one's values will accommodate these new insights. It appears to follow by necessity that since everyone's experiences - and their insights into those experiences - will be different, then conceivably everyone's values could be different. In the preface to Values and Teaching this relativistic claim is explicitly affirmed.

> Different groups of people might have different values and...all views should be open for discussion, examination, possible affirmation, rejection, or doubt. In other words, people should be free to differ in their value indicators and their positions should be respected (pgs. viii - ix).

For Simon, values are, by definition, personal things. Being a product of personal experience values are not subject to proof or consensus. Simon reasons that since there is no consensus on what constitutes 'desirable' values, the imposition of a specific value on a young child will inhibit his development. Blind conformity to external codes - be they religious commandments, moral imperatives or social conventions - are all rejected as stifling: external codes limit choices. Simon states unequivocally, "There is no room in this theory for values that are imposed by outside pressure (1978, p. 47). The final break with the indoctrinative model could hardly be more pronounced.

Predictably, Simon maintains that values are not "hard and fast verities"; they are "the results of hammering out a style of life in a certain set of surroundings." After enough 'hammering', patterns develop. These patterns of evaluation and behavior become our values. These values "are treated as *right, desirable, or worthy*" (p. 26).

In Helping Your Child Learn Right From Wrong: A Guide to Values Clarification, Simon states, "Values cannot be taught" (1976b, p. 23). One reason he offers is that no one has the 'right' values for anyone else. What can be taught to children is the process by which to arrive at values and the necessary criteria to examine "whether they really are living according to what they say they value" (p. 23).

Simon proposes values must satisfy seven criteria. These are:

Choosing: (1) freely
(2) from alternatives
(3) after thoughtful consideration of the consequences of each alternative
Prizing: (4) cherishing, being happy with the choice
(5) enough to be willing to affirm the choice to others
Acting: (6) or doing something with the choice
(7) repeatedly, in some pattern of life (p. 28).

Consistent with the view that indoctrination is a misguided approach, advocates of the VCT are not much interested in identifying the values which children ultimately hold. The "process" by which children can find their own values - so as to deal with their unique experiences - is the operative feature of the theory. From Helping Your Child Learn Right From Wrong, Simon comments:

> Values cannot be taught. But the process for arriving at them can be. We can teach our children to examine life rationally...Then we can help them to learn how to scrutinize their lives to see whether they are really living according to what they say they value. We can impress upon them the importance of arriving at their own personal values (1976b, p. 23).

The methodology recommended by Simon for classroom VC exercises borrows heavily from the therapeutic approach of client-centered therapy devised by Carl Rogers. One similarity is in the proposal that a teacher should employ nonjudgmental active-listening techniques. Active-listening, another technique with roots in the Piagetian clinical method, is characterized by the use of clarifying responses.

Some of the essential characteristics of an appropriate clarifying response from a teacher are that it signals to the students an accepting and

noncommittal attitude, that it is phrased nonjudgmentally, and that elicits opportunities for the student to ponder alternative courses of actions as they survey all possible consequences of different actions.

Directives that are especially pertinent here are:

1. The clarifying response avoids moralizing, criticizing, giving values, or evaluating. The adult excludes all hints of "good" or "right" or "acceptability", or their opposites in such response.

2. It puts the responsibility on the students to look at their behavior or ideas and to think and decide for themselves what it is *they* want.

3. A clarifying response also entertains the possibility that the student will *not* look or decide or think. It is permissive and stimulating but not insistent.

4. Clarifying responses operate in situations where there are no "right" answers - as in situations involving feelings, attitudes, beliefs, or purposes. They are *not* appropriate for drawing a student toward a predetermined answer. They are not questions for which the teacher has an answer...in mind (1976b, p. 56)

"In *all* cases," Simon insists, "responses are open-ended - that is, they lead the student to no specific value. No one must deliver a "right" answer to a clarifying response. Each student must be permitted to react in a personal and individual way" (p. 58)

Again, the justification for this directive is that no one has the 'right' answer to deliver. This may explain Simon's disinterest in identifying specific values: in that it is conceivable each individual will hold different values, the identification process would be a daunting, if not impossible, task.

Simon qualifies this directive as not necessarily communicating "approval"; rather, value clarifying requires "acceptance of a person's total being as it is". Here the parallels with Rogerian client-centered therapy are striking. With the recognition that some people may prefer not to be more

thoughtful about values, coupled with VC's aversion to "imposition" and in recognition that "the particular content of (the teacher's) values holds no more weight than would anyone else's" (1972, p. 27) the following directive emerges:

> It should be increasingly clear that the adult does not force personal values upon children. What the adult does do is create conditions that aid children in finding values *if* they choose to do so. When operating within this value theory, it is entirely possible that children will choose not to develop values. It is the teacher's responsibility to support this choice also (1976a, p. 48).

In summary, the originators of the Value Clarification theory have proposed that all previous methods of moral development are inadequate in present times. The main reasons they offer in support of this claim are that modern times are complex and that children become perplexed about what is morally right due to the array of conflicting opinions they hear.

Furthermore, Simon charges previous methods of moral development have always been ineffective. Although 'values' themselves are not subject to 'proof' or 'consensus', objective observation of the current state of value-confusion seems to clearly indicate that these other methods have not assisted people to arrive at "deep commitments of any sort".

The indoctrination to specific principles and values and the process of habituation will inevitably lead to an undesirable state of affairs. No one has the 'right' values for someone else's child. Here again Simon cites the prevalence of children that display 'value-confusion' as evidence. Unlike the assumption in the indoctrinative method that there are specific values that have served others well in the past as they will serve children well in the future, in VC "there is the implicit assumption that the moral norms of society have largely broken down" (Scharf, 1978, p. 27).

To remedy value confusion, Simon offers a process of valuing that is relatively easy to implement in schools. This process prescribes seven criteria that establish the necessary and sufficient conditions for something to be a 'value'. It is assumed that a cognitive clarity on value issues will lead to a more purposeful and satisfying life.

Another essential feature of VC, which distinguishes it from the indoctrinative approach, is that learning is gauged predominately by an increased awareness of oneself and not by the level of conformity to accepted societal values. Autonomy, not conformity, is one goal.

Shame in Simon's Theory

Although one may hear an occasional reference to VC in public schools, as a credible theory and as an operative method it currently has few supporters. Throughout the years many objections have been leveled against VC. Commentators charge that the theory is merely a simple formulation of ethical relativism (Kilpatrick, 1992; Stewart, 1976). Unlike conventionalism, that can rely on a consensus as a system of checks and balances, the relativistic orientation of VC ultimately leaves individual children to their own devices in the decision-making process and in the justification of their decisions. Teachers report that if they are to adhere to the directives of the method, they can not respond to clear cases of objectionable choices (Lickona, 1992). When teachers are instructed to avoid all pronouncements of "good", "right" and "acceptable", shameful behavior is allowed to go unchallenged.

Simon's seven criteria of a "value" can be faulted for being too permissive. Merely to choose one value from among those available and to then happily and repeatedly conform to it are insufficient requirements. S

might choose self-centeredness and dishonesty and, although deluded, he might consider himself content with his choices. A co-author of the theory, Merrill Harmin, appears to have considered this objection.

> Our emphasis on value neutrality probably did undermine traditional morality...As I look back, it would have been better had we presented a more balanced picture...It makes a good deal of sense to say that truthfulness is better than deception, caring is better than hurting, loyalty is better than betrayal, and sharing is better than exploitation (cited in Lickona, 1991, p. 237).

Shame, in Values and Teaching, is only referred to once. In this quotation it is unclear whether Simon means to imply that shame and clear values can coexist.

> There is something about emotional needs which are the source of shame...If we are extremely fearful or feel deeply guilty, we are somewhat ashamed of the situation and do things to hide the facts. On the other hand, when we have values, we are genuinely proud of them; we cherish and esteem them and hold them dear (1966, p. 198).

It is not at all clear that any general assessment of shame's influence on character development can be made in the value clarification theory. If each individual establishes their own value system, then feelings of shame will vary accordingly. For example, if an individual, S, adopts an operative egoistic principle of "me first" to guide his actions, then instances of disregarding the rights and needs of others need not elicit feelings of shame. And if optimal character development operates as the theory suggests, no external imposition of rules or codes of conduct will cause S to reassess his position. S will not be influenced by "honesty is the best policy" or similar virtuous prescriptions if these are all to be dismissed as value impositions from some

alien and external source.

Simon's rather confusing quotation above seems to imply that value clarity eliminates occasions for shame. Shame might be an incentive for someone to "get clear" on their values. But it is difficult to know, from Simon's text, whether the self-centered S is on his way toward greater clarity or has already arrived.

Lawrence Kohlberg

In the 1970s Lawrence Kohlberg introduced an extensively researched theory of moral development that was more substantial than the alternative theory advanced by Simon. Kohlberg proposed that moral development occurs in an invariant and universal sequence of six qualitatively distinct stages. His research also advanced a method for identifying and scoring these stages as well as a proposal on how moral development can best be fostered.

In Kohlberg's view, moral development occurs in six steps of three consecutive levels. The major levels he labels as the preconventional, the conventional, and the postconventional . Each major level is subdivided and the subdivisions are labeled numerically (e.g., stage two is the second step of the preconventional level, stage three is the first step of the conventional level, etc.). The preconventional level is occupied by most children under 9, some adolescents, and most criminal offenders (Kohlberg, 1976). The conventional level is "the level of *most adolescents and adults* in our society and in other societies" (p. 33, italics added). The postconventional level is reached by only a small minority (1976).

"Conventional" Kohlberg defines as "conforming to and upholding the rules and expectations and conventions of society or authority just because

they are society's rules, expectations, or conventions" (p. 33). And the three different levels are best understood, according to Kohlberg, as the relationship of the individual with these conventions, rules, and expectations of society (1976). The levels are distinguishable by changes in the social perspective of an individual, specifically by the justifications he will give for what is right and by his reasons for upholding what is right.

Kohlberg believed all people are philosophically inquisitive. Irrespective of age, many of the philosophical puzzles that all people ponder are moral in nature. These questions, believed to have universal appeal and which guided Kohlberg's investigations were: "How should I live?", "What is right?", and, "How do I know it is right?" (Howard, 1991). Like Piaget's clinical interviewing method, and with obvious and acknowledged credit to Dewey, Kohlberg's research aim was clearly established. His elaborate research method intended to assess the maturity of an individual's moral reasoning by the justifications that were given to resolve standardized dilemmas and stories.

Movement to a higher stage is characterized by an individuals ability to offer more sophisticated justifications for the resolution. Kohlberg's most famous testing dilemma was that of Heinz. With his wife dying from a rare form of cancer, Heinz becomes aware of a druggist who has formulated an expensive new drug that might save his wife. Heinz is distressed to learn that he does not have enough money to purchase the drug and that the druggist with neither lower his asking price nor will he issue credit.

Kohlberg asks his subjects, "Should Heinz steal the drug?" The classification of the responses according to Kohlberg's stage model will determine an individual's level. For example, Stage 1 responses resemble "Stealing is wrong. It is against the law. Heinz will be punished for stealing". A stage 3 conventional level response might be: "Heinz should not steal. If

everyone in difficult times, stole, society would break down. Only bad people steal." Kohlberg gives this example of a stage 6 response to the Heinz dilemma.

> It is wrong legally but right morally. Systems of law are valid only insofar as they reflect the sort of moral law all rational people can accept. One must consider the personal justice involved, which is the root of the social contract...Personal justice means, "Treat each person as an end, not as a means (p. 39).

Kohlberg's theory of moral stages is summarized below.

LEVEL 1- PRECONVENTIONAL

Stage 1: "Punishment and Obedience" Orientation

What is right - literal obedience to authority, avoid breaking rules
Reasons for doing right - to conform with authority, to avoid punishment
Social perspective - egocentric outlook, unable to empathize with others

Stage 2: Instrumental purpose and exchange

What is right - obey rules only when it is in one's best interest
Reasons for doing right - to best serve oneself
Social perspective - right is relative to concrete individuals

LEVEL 2 - CONVENTIONAL

Stage 3: "Good boy, Nice girl" orientation

What is right - to abide by expectations of ones associates
Reasons for doing right - the need to be regarded as "good", desire to maintain rules of authority figures
Social perspective - expectations of others takes precedence over self-interest, awareness of Golden Rule and shared feelings and agreements

Stage 4: Social System and Conscience, "Law and Order" Orientation

What is right - Fulfilling obligations, doing one's duty, behavior that contributes to and supports society or one's group
Reasons for doing right - to avoid breakdown of groups and systems
Social perspective - takes viewpoint of system that defines roles and rules

LEVEL 3 - POSTCONVENTIONAL

Stage 5: Social Contract, Utility and Individual rights

What is right - to impartially uphold values that are relative to one's group, and to uphold values recognized as universal.
Reasons for doing right - obligation to the law for welfare of others, feelings of contractual commitments, concern for law based on utility

Stage 6 - Universal Ethical Principles
What is right - determined by universal and self-chosen ethical principles
Reasons for doing right- personal commitment to moral principles
Social perspective - a rational person recognizes that the nature of morality requires people be treated as ends in themselves

Kohlberg's moral stage theory is far more elaborate than Piaget's, although the latter's influence on Kohlberg is clearly evident. Both theorists consider progress to be successive qualitative cognitive changes with each new stage deriving from and supplanting the preceding one. Piaget's preoperational child - as with Stage 1 and 2 children - will presumably view laws as external impositions of an authority's commands. Each theorist proposes these children are egocentric and that they will obey rules primarily to avoid punishment.

Piaget's concrete operational child begins to understand the purpose of laws and to assess the motivations of others. In a like manner, Kohlberg's conventional individual (Stages 3 and 4) recognizes lawful behavior as supportive of society, is concerned with the welfare of others, assumes obligations and duties for the common good, and is capable of empathic interplay with his associates. Both concrete operational and conventional stage individuals are capable of subordinating personal needs for the welfare of the group. The formal operations person in Piaget's model will view laws as alterable and he will assume a participatory role when it is merited. Similarly, a person at Kohlberg's Stage 6 will override laws if they conflict with universal or self-chosen moral principles.

With a clear reference to Piaget, Kohlberg explicitly states that the attainment of higher moral stages is contingent upon cognitive development.

> Since moral reasoning clearly is reasoning, advanced moral reasoning depends upon advanced logical reasoning. There is a parallelism between an individual's logical stage and his moral stage. A person whose logical stage is only concrete operational is limited to the preconventional moral stages, Stages 1 and 2 (Kohlberg, 1976, p. 32)

Only cognitive growth allows one to pass sequentially through the qualitatively different moral stages. For Kohlberg, this growth takes place most effectively in a "just community" or in a school that encourages Socratic dialogues and policy decisions arrived at democratically. The use of dilemmas to foster moral development and a school curriculum organized to accommodate democratic participation illustrates two fundamental differences between Kohlberg's theory and the indoctrinative model.

The direct transmission of values advocated by the indoctrinative approach is rejected by Kohlberg as a "romantic" misconception. With an emphasis on moral reasoning and personal experience, Kohlberg shifted the focus from modeling and lecture to one of Socratic dialogues geared to be personally relevant. "Teaching virtue", Kohlberg writes,"is the asking of questions and pointing the way, not the giving of answers" (cited in Howard, 1991, p. 51). Socratic dialogues was one operating philosophy for the "just community" schools. Another distinctive notion was that effective schools ought to be run by democratic participation. Students, staff, and faculty in community "town meetings" would set and enforce the schools rules and debate appropriate punishments for infractions. Each person gets one vote on all policy issues.

In classes, current events and difficult social issues (e.g., pollution, racial and gender discrimination, nuclear proliferation) as well as specific behaviors (e.g., lying, stealing, drug use, attendance) are the topics of debate (Howard,

1991). Although Kohlbergian techniques are still endorsed by many teachers and consultants, the just community school experiment had dismal results.

From his office at Harvard's School of Education, Kohlberg's most direct involvement benefited the Cluster School in Brookline, Massachusetts. In addition to Kohlberg's supervision, the school had an envious student - teacher ratio: thirty students interacting with six teachers and dozens of consultants (Kilpatrick, 1991). However, one observer remarked that the school seemed in constant turmoil. "Student-citizens (were) forever stealing from one another and using drugs during school hours" and the community meetings seemed to be continually preoccupied with "problems with drugs, theft, sex, and racial divisions" (cited in Kilpatrick, p. 92). In only its fifth year of operation the Cluster School closed.

The enthusiasm with which Merrill Harmin (co-author of VC) and Kohlberg introduced their theories was not matched by positive personal evaluations of the practical results of their respective theories. Kohlberg himself became disenchanted with his theory in practice. Reminiscent of Harmin's reconsideration of his value clarification theory, Kohlberg retracted his disdainful assessment of the indoctrinative methodology.

> Some years of active involvement with the practice of moral education at Cluster School has led me to realize that my notion...was mistaken...The educator must be a socializer teaching value content and behavior, and not only a Socratic or Rogerian process-facilitator of development...I no longer hold these negative views of indoctrinative moral education...This is true, by necessity, in a world in which children engage in stealing, cheating and aggression (cited in Kilpatrick, 1992, p. 92).

Shame in Kohlberg's Theory

As with any complex and innovative idea, Kohlberg's theory has been subjected to intense scrutiny. A common criticism is that Kohlberg's method relies almost exclusively on cognitive operations (Lockwood, 1978; Beach, 1992; Kilpatrick, 1992). It is one thing, Kilpatrick suggests, to know the right thing to do and quite another to do it (1992). A careful review of Kohlberg's theory supports the charges that it overlooks much of the impact of the affective dimension on moral development, that it fails to account for cognitive rationizations undermined by a weak will or a lack of moral courage, that the early moral stages are portrayed as one-dimensional, and that the theory entails an inadequate notion of the central role of moral training in moral development. By far the most common criticism concerns Kohlberg's neglect of the moral emotions.

> Kohlberg, like Piaget, is particularly weak on the development of the affective side of morality, of the moral emotions such as "guilt", "concern for others", "remorse" and so on...(and) Kohlberg, in his references to ego strength, sees the importance of will in morality, but offers no account of the type of habit training which encourages or discourages its growth (Peters, "Phi Delta Kappan", June,1975, p. 678).

By way of illustration, in a clinical interview setting, an agent, S, may cognitively sort out and verbally justify some course of action, a, in situation, x. But Kohlberg seems to underappreciate a legitimate concern: that, in action, S might actually do b or c regardless of what S might say. And having done b or c, presumably knowing a to be the right thing to do, how might this affect S? Kohlberg seems to anticipate one aspect of this objection.

> A variety of factors determines whether a particular person will live up to his stage of moral reasoning in a particular situation, though moral stage is a good predictor of action in various experimental and naturalistic settings (1976, p. 33).

In a subsequent article, Kohlberg even softens his claim that a moral stage is a good predictor. He explains away those occasions of a discrepancy between words and deeds by suggesting a person, at a given cognitive stage, "may be one or more stages lower in morality" (1981, p. 138). To avoid unpleasant consequences, or "not wishing to be a martyr", a person may "*prefer* to reason at a lower level" (p. 139). But to reason and to act at a lower level clearly sounds like stage-regression - something Kohlberg denies ever occurs.

Kohlbergian moral stages, then, are only predictors of the range of alternatives an agent is aware of and of why one ought to act in some specific way, not a predictor of what the individual will actually do. And if Kohlberg's theory confines itself with the range of alternatives and justifications as the sole constituents of a particular moral stage, neither an agent's emotional response to his actual conduct nor that agent's resistance to pressures and temptations will be introduced or calculated. Only cognitive justifications are Kohlberg's target; conscience, desire, emotional reactions, and concrete acts will not be influential designators of one's moral stage. If one factor in calculation of the strength of one's character is the ability to withstand temptation, any theory which neglects this variable is, by design, flawed.

So Kohlberg's theory, with its cognitive "what-if" orientation, does not calculate feelings of shame. As has been argued, reflecting upon the self-regarding emotions will influence how one thinks about how one ought to conduct oneself on future occasions. Since one objective of Kohlberg's work is to assess how children progress to the next higher stage, ignoring the affective

factor that will - arguably - foster this movement seems to be a serious oversight. And it is not surprising that religious educators are among those that are most dissatisfied with a Kohlbergian approach to moral development.

> In the classical Judeo-Christian tradition of moral theology, much attention is given to the nature of conscience, as the inner principle that determines choice...(and) much attention is...given to the troubled or guilty or "accusing" conscience, where the self comes to acknowledge that it *has* acted in violation of the moral norms the self knows or *at least professed in principle*. Guilt, remorse, contrition, repentance, forgiveness - these traditional categories of moral theology - are lacking in Kohlberg's descriptive and normative analysis of cognitive moral development (Beach, 1992, p. 39, italics added).

An even more startling limitation is suggested in an analysis of Kohlberg's moral stage theory by Gareth Matthews. Matthews observes that according to the conditions of Stage 1 and 2, children will resist performing prohibited acts only to avoid punishment. This assertion, Matthews notes, necessarily categorizes these children as "pre-moral".

> The reason they are only pre-moral is that their concept of obligation as the realization that they will likely be punished if they do such-and-such is not a concept of moral obligation at all. It is just the recognition that there are some things we get punished, or rewarded, for doing (Matthews, 1995, pp. 55-56).

Even if a particular child is only occasionally capable of doing the right thing for the right reason, Matthews reasons, then they are entitled to be classified as more than pre-moral. To say otherwise is simply mistaken and condescending, if not morally objectionable.

Matthews's insight can apply to the conventional stages with equal force. To act in such a way so as to please others (Stage 3) or merely to maintain the social order (Stage 4) may cause us shame if and when we let

others down. But to merely abide by conventions need not take on a moral dimension. Kohlberg himself defines "conventional" as abiding by society's commands *just because* they are society's commands. So a person can conform to these conventions amorally; he need not trouble himself with whether the particular laws of his society or his associates are just. An agent will conform simply because it is the conventional practice or because it is an external imposition ("It's the policy" or "We've always done it this way") or in order to maintain the respect of his associates ("I was only following orders" or "This is what is expected of me"). Performing the objectionable requirements of membership in a street gang, a blind obedience to corporate policies that are clearly harmful to others, committing murder so as to be a "made-man" in the Mafia, or subjugating blacks as a policy of a white supremacist group are all concrete examples.

If these conventionalists rationalize their questionable behavior as the means to maintain acceptance within a group or to maintain order within a particular society, then their activities will not necessarily elicit a moral shame. It would be incompatible for an individual at Stage 3 or 4 to feel shame in acknowledging of a moral failure and, at the same time, to feel pride for successfully upholding a group standard. An agent's shame would require that some aspect of the group's standard is seen as reprehensible and conformity to it, therefore, would be no justifiable basis for pride. One might, of course, feel conflicted; one might acknowledge the "dirty hands" problem.[17] But conflict implies an uncertainty as to how to order one's priorities. For the Stage 3 or 4 conventionalist, in Kohlbergian terms, the sole priority is to abide by the expectations of one's associates. This troubles Matthews.

[17] The concept of "dirty hands", as I understand the term, refers to the acceptance of performing some act that entails a morally repugnant feature or, because of its alleged benefit, the act itself transcends moral considerations. Issuing orders for a military attack knowing innocent civilians will undoubtably be killed might qualify as an example.

> One who conforms to expectations simply to avoid disapproval (Stage 3) or even one who acts to maintain the "given social order for its own sake" (Stage 4) has not, it seems, *or at least not for those reasons*, attained a specifically moral understanding of obligation. It begins to look as though all stages before Stage 5, or even Stage 6, are really pre-moral stages (1994, p. 60).

As Kohlberg himself defines the "good-boy" and "law and order" levels, an individual's primary concern is with appearances, pleasing others, or supporting the current operating system. Whether these conventions are "just" or universally applicable are only considerations that supposedly motivate action for Kohlberg's highest stages - the postconventional.

Matthews's "pre-moral" criticism has profound implications. For according to Kohlberg's theory, it is quite possible to be cognitively and morally at Stage 4 while being a thoroughly evil person. To see that this is so we need only reflect on the idea of a violent Klansman doing what he deems necessary to keep his social world "pure". And what this example illustrates is that Kohlberg's moral stage theory - up to and including Stage 4 - fails to discriminate among the objects of a person's values and interests. A mere conformity to group conventions are not principles by which one can distinguish the good from the bad; nor are they prescriptions by which we can evaluate right from wrong. Clearly it is the case that the values and interests of maintaining a Klan group is not morally equivalent to the value and interest of supporting a town's elementary school or its church.

Kohlberg never addressed this criticism, but he, as well as others, have attempted to answer the critics who charge that his theory inadequately accommodates the affective aspects of moral development. A standard response is articulated in "Lawrence Kohlberg: The Cognitive-Developmental Approach to Moral Education".

> Kohlberg claims that he has not neglected will and feeling in moral development; rather they are part of the process of moral reasoning. Thus, he would argue that the exemplars of stage 6 morality - Gandhi, Martin Luther King, and Jesus - are proof the 'the cognitively developed' person is also a person of great moral passion and feeling...The Stage 6 person who has reached the heights of cognitive moral development is also a person of great moral passion (p. 79).

But this response hardly addresses whether moral feelings affect moral *development*. It merely acknowledges that Jesus, Martin Luther King, Jr., and Gandhi - unquestionably Stage 6 (or higher) individuals - are "also people of great moral passion". To say that moral feelings are part of the process of moral reasoning at Stage 6 is not to say that they are essential components of the earlier stages or that they are necessary for the attainment of subsequent stages. Kohlberg merely acknowledges Gandhi to have been a man of moral passion. This is beyond dispute. Consider the suggestion that what Kohlberg overlooks is that Gandhi was an individual of great moral feeling from a very early age. Precisely because of this attribute, one could argue further, Stage 6 became attainable for Gandhi. Kohlberg has no explanation for how this could be.

It is, then, a valid inference on Kohlberg's model that only persons at Stage 5 or 6 can feel moral shame in instances of personal failings that involve and appeal to notions of universal values. This insight suggests that Kohlberg does more than ignore the moral emotions; at the early stages, his theory does not allow for them. Since one can experience moral shame only after one has reached the highest levels - something very few actually do - than, in Kohlberg's theory, moral shame can have *no* impact on the development of character. Kohlberg appears to be committed to the view that one will be

sensitive to moral shame only after one's moral development has evolved into that of a "mature specimen".

So another startling implication of Matthews's dissatisfaction with Kohlberg's theory is the apparent suggestion that, aside from instances of violating conventions (which in themselves may be misguided), all children and most adults are morally shameless. What is there to be ashamed of if one satisfies his own interest or supposes he has abided by the prevailing conventions?

A final difficulty with Kohlberg's theory of moral development concerns what his method of assessment purports to measure. A Kohlbergian stage is assigned to individuals by virtue of how he or she resolves an ethical dilemma. But if we are to understand character as defined by the patterns and continuity of thoughts, actions, and habits of an individual which are guided by the values to which this person is committed, then a proper assessment of character requires a long perspective - a reflective view of an entire life or, at least, a sizable portion of a life. Survey answers hardly seem adequate to render a clear portrayal of this intricate nature. Even if we were to concede what a person says he would do to be an authentic and accurate testimony of what he will do, resolving the conflicting claims in a hypothetical dilemma gives but one perspective into a person's character. Joel Kupperman objects to this "snapshot" orientation which he claims infects many ethical theories. Kupperman observes that the decision-procedures proposed in many ethical theories are formulated in terms of discrete choices so that "the character, habits, and past decisions...of the moral agent drop out of the picture" (Kupperman, 1991, p. 151). Along these same lines, Matthews faults the narrow focus of the Kohlbergian approach.

In Matthews's view moral development takes place across five dimensions: paradigms, defining characteristics, the range of cases, adjudicating conflicting moral claims, and moral imagination (1994). Paradigms are the ability of a person to identify acts that exemplify virtues and vices (e.g., is this particular act an act of 'lying', 'bravery', 'responsibility', etc). "Defining characteristics" is an ability to define terms of moral assessment in enlightening ways. For example, the definition of lying as uttering a falsehood with the intention to deceive signifies growth from the response of "naughty words". "Range of cases" concerns the ability of a person to identify the various acts that can be morally assessed within each paradigm. Is keeping incorrect change at the supermarket an act of stealing? And is it lying if, at the time, one notices the teller's mistake and says nothing? Matthews's fourth dimension - adjudicating conflicting moral claims - is the ability to sort out the right thing to do when two moral claims appear to make demands on us at the same time. The Heinz dilemma is a case in point. Does our obligation to help others or alleviate suffering override our duty to respect another person's property? Matthews faults Kohlberg's focus on this dimension to the exclusion of all the others (1994).

The last dimension in Matthews's view, moral imagination, is the ability to see the moral import in our lives and actions. It is, among other things, the ability to empathize with others, a projective sensitivity to anticipate whether our actions will alleviate or cause suffering, and an openness to concrete instances of moral obligation. Quite literally, before one decides whether to contribute some money to a hungry beggar, that person must notice him there on the sidewalk. If one is insensitive to suffering, then he will be unaware of some of his moral obligations.

Envisioning the "better self" is an act of moral imagination. So some instances of shamelessness might be explained - in the past tense - as moral unreflectiveness, and - in the future tense - as an inability to see, or an insensitivity to, our moral alternatives. The conventionalism of early indoctrinators, the rigidity and limited view of the personal constructivism of Piaget, and the presumptuous relativism and value-neutrality of value clarification all, in their own way, inhibit moral imagination. And Kohlberg cannot calculate how moral shame will affect character development when it occurs in these other dimensions if he does not recognize - or if he fails to acknowledge - these dimensions exist. Character education takes a broader perspective on moral development. Let's turn to that now.

A Modern Character Education Model

Current models of character education (CE) subscribe to many of the same principles espoused by their indoctrinative predecessors. Some character education advocates, most notably, Thomas Lickona, have developed moral education theories that are also selectively informed by the work of Piaget and Kohlberg.

One principle of CE is that certain core ethical values form the basis of good character. Honesty, fairness, responsibility, respect for oneself and for others, and thoughtfulness are among the values that many CE organizations consider obligatory (such as the Character Education Partnership, The Center for the 4th and 5th R's[18] , the Heartwood Institute, the Jefferson Center for CE, and the Josephson Institute of Ethics). Schools committed to CE unapologetically name specific qualities they expect their students to strive

[18] The fourth and fifth R's are respect and responsibility.

for, their staff to model, and to which all school members are held accountable (Huffman, 1994; Lickona, Schaps, and Lewis, 1995).

The direct evolution of current CE models from the early indoctrinative model is justified in the literature as sharing the educational goals of assisting people to become both smart and good and by the vision consistent with the American Founders of democracy (Lickona, 1992). Since democracy is government by and of the people, the reasoning goes, people themselves must be good for the government to be good.

A second guiding principle of CE, unlike a cognitive-developmental approach, is that effective programs must address the cognitive, the emotional, and the behavioral aspects of moral life. It is not simply enough to proceed through more sophisticated reasoning stages; desire and action play equally important roles in moral development.

> Good character consists of knowing the good, desiring the good, and doing the good - habits of the mind, habits of the heart, and habits of action. All three are necessary for leading a moral life; all three make up moral maturity (1992, p. 51).

The emphasis on action in CE programs shifts the focus of an ethical life of reasoning through dilemmas to one that emphasizes the affective dimension. It is just as essential to desire virtue and to do the right thing as it is to reason correctly. There will be no dilemma, CE proponents point out, if stealing is thought to be permissible or considered to be attractive. The story of Kohlberg's puzzlement over the ineffectiveness of his approach in prisons testifies to this point.[19] The Heinz dilemma will only be a dilemma to those who believe that stealing is, with few exceptions, an immoral activity, and, as such, repugnant.

[19] See, for example, Kilpatrick, 1992, "How Not to Teach Morality", pp. 78 - 95.

Another notion which distinguishes character educators from cognitive-developmentalists (CD) is their respective views of human nature. Developmentalists charge CE as having a dim and pessimistic view of children. Some see CE as focusing on how to teach children to restrain impulses, to overcome self-centeredness, to socialize them away from their natural tendencies to be, in Hobbesian terms, "mean, nasty, and brutish". But an optimism about children's natural goodness does not motivate alternative approaches. Alfie Kohn, in support of the developmental approach, cites scientific studies that replicate Hartshorne and May's findings that propose people are at the mercy of circumstance.

> (CE) ignores the accumulated evidence from the field of social psychology demonstrating that much of how we act and who we are reflects the situations in which we find ourselves. Virtually all the landmark studies in this discipline have been variations on this theme (Phi Delta Kappan, Feb.1997, p. 431).

Kohn alleges CE teachers overlook the notion of character formation as a function of one's social environment. This misconception is so common, Kohn claims "social psychologists have dubbed this the 'fundamental attribution error'" (p. 431). Cognitive developmentalists hardly seem to gain any moral high ground with this view if they are committed to the notion that all children are susceptible to a kind of social determinism. Arrange the environment in a certain way, they seem to be saying, and a certain product inevitably emerges. The character educators, on the other hand, propose children need guidance, models, and socialization to develop virtue. If there is cause for optimism in either view, it might weight in favor of the CE view: regardless of the environment, or more to the point, in spite of a bad environment, CE suggests good children can emerge with good training.

Training is a point of contention between CD and CE. Character educators favor practice so that "habits" form. Their hope is that good acts become second-nature. CD views habit as unreflective, a "mindless conformity to externally imposed standards of conduct" (Kohn, 1997, p. 434). Developmentalists favor a participatory arrangement of the classroom to foster empathy, skepticism and "the cultivation of autonomy" rather than a blind obedience to uniform standards (Kohn, 1997). CE methods, Kohn charges, encourage children to follow rules "regardless of whether they are reasonable and to respect authority regardless of whether that respect has been earned" (p. 432).

Other shared principles of CE with the early indoctrinative model is the central roles of stories, a belief in the power of example, and of the importance of discipline to help children to develop the virtues. CE believes, as did the early indoctrinative educators, that stories provide children with good examples thereby creating an attachment to goodness and proper codes of conduct (Kilpatrick, 1994). The power of example is emphasized in many CE programs. Huffman cites the Mount Lebanon School District's Code of Ethics that requires "the staff and the members of the Board of Directors...to model the District's Core Values in their work" (1994, p. 51). Discipline is thought of as an edifying deterrent.

> Responses to rule-breaking should give students opportunities for restitution and foster the students' understanding of the rules and willingness to abide by them (Lickona, et al 1996).

Rationales for implementing a character education program in a public school will frequently open with a list of dangers facing children and a report on the undesirable behaviors of contemporary children. On the first page of Thomas Lickona's preface to Henry Huffman's Developing A Character

Education Program, he cites statistical reports of increasing levels of dishonesty, violence, disrespect, peer cruelty, bigotry, self-centeredness, self-destructive behaviors, and ethical illiteracy as incentives to institute character education efforts (Huffman,1994). Enlisting the support of parents, community politicians and organizations, the public school staff, area businesses, and the clergy are integral parts of CE efforts. Unlike early indoctrinative initiatives no longer can one assume the goals for moral development initiatives will be universally supported. For example, parents and social institutions can no longer be taken for granted as support systems for public school character education initiatives. A May, 1994 newspaper article reports a "modest amendment" before Congress to award public school grants to support the teaching of values such as honesty, responsibility, and caring. The amendment was "soundly defeated" for the seventh time (Sharpe, Wall Street Journal, 10 May 1994). During consideration of the measure, Representative Richard Armey (R - Texas) argued to the Education and Labor Committee:

> I, for one, would not tolerate anyone having the presumption to dare to think they should define who my children are, what their values are, what their ethics are...The fact is these people don't know my children...love my children...they don't care about my children...(nor do they) accept responsibility for the outcome...and they ought to, by God, leave my kids alone (10 May 1994).

Opposition to character education in the public schools also takes the form of objections to indoctrination, as the imposition of religious doctrines, and as a potential inhibitor of critical thinking skills. Developmentalists allege that a primary objective of CE initiatives is, in fact, not to foster a child's social or moral development, but to merely demand good behavior or, in early indoctrinative terminology, conformity to the prevailing norms. As Kohn

understands it, the goal of CE is to "get compliance, to make children act the way we what them to" (1997, p. 434). Traditional responses from CE advocates are that the values they promote are objectively worthwhile and that schools have an obligation to "not only expose students to these values but also to help them to understand, internalize, and act upon such values" (Lickona, 1991, p. 38). This, they contend, can be accomplished without religious influence.

A response to the developmentalists that might be more persuasive is that as a child develops it is hoped he will accept the moral virtues not because they have been imposed upon or required of him but because the child recognizes virtue to characterize human excellence. A virtuous life, to this child, is seen as something of great value.

Shame in the Modern Character Education Model

Although Lickona, in Educating for Character, recognizes the importance of the affective dimension in moral development, little or no attention is given to the emotion of moral shame as an intrinsic motivation to guide present behavior or to modify future behavior. This is also true of the rest of the literature from the character education movement with which I am familiar. In this way CE resembles VC and CD in essentially overlooking specific emotions of self-assessment.

When one fails to do what one supposes to be right, Lickona (as do many psychologists) presumes this will evoke a "constructive guilt".

> A mature conscience includes, besides a sense of moral obligation, the capacity for constructive guilt. If you feel obligated in conscience to behave in a certain way, you will feel guilty... Constructive guilt says, "I didn't live up to my own standards. I feel bad about that, but I'm going to do better" (p. 58).

In this brief description, Lickona attributes to constructive guilt: 1) the failure to live up to an important value, 2) a painful self-regarding feeling, and, 3) the resolve to improve. From the earlier analyses of the emotions, it seems none of these characteristics are necessarily unique to guilt. Painful feelings are common to many self-regarding emotions (e.g., regret, remorse, repentance, humiliation, shame, etc.) and, therefore, Lickona's analysis fails to help us locate distinguishing attributes of guilt. Failing to live up to a personal standard elicits feelings of shame. The resolve to reform belongs to repentance. Guilt, it had been suggested, concerns the violation of a prohibition that carries with it the obligation to make amends. One can make amends without a personal reformation.

Lickona also ascribes this resolve to improve to humility which he defines as a: "genuine openness to the truth and a willingness to act to correct our failings" (p. 61). But humility need not recognize moral failings; more accurately, humility is an appraisal of one's limitations. Here honest recognition is called for, not motivation for correction or improvement.

With the affective dimension in full play, Lickona leans to the cognitive-developmental approach to resolve specific difficulties. He suggests that just as teachers actively involve children in the democratic adoption of classroom rules, they can "continue (this) same critical thinking process with regard to consequences" (1991, p. 118).

> By discussing...consequences, the teacher can help students understand that the purpose of a consequence is not to make them suffer but to help them improve their behavior (p. 118).

Although this approach emphasizes the positive, democratic participation needs to be utilized carefully whenever the topics are rules and consequences. Many methods that advocate this approach (Discipline with

Dignity, Conflict Resolution) all contain disclaimers that instruct the teacher to override student's poor choices and suggestions. Most students quickly come to see the limits of this type of classroom "democracy".

Character education advocates, in particular Thomas Lickona, are doing important work in public education. Their overall approach has much to recommend it. More precision in the affective dimension, however, will only improve an already admirable undertaking.

Summary of Moral Education Theories

The answers to Dewey's three fundamental questions for educators summarizes the respective differences between the theoretical approaches to moral education.

For the early indoctrinative educators, "What is right?" is answered by the prevailing societal and cultural norms. The Value Clarification Theory (VC) proposes that right is relative; each child, through reflection, experience, and circumstance will arrive at their own personal response. Cognitive-developmentalists (CD) believe valid and universal moral principles exist. Justice and respect for human dignity are preferable to both an egocentric self-interest and to an unquestioning conformity to convention. Character Education (CE) advocates also believe a set of core universal ethical values define good character. But CE considers right conduct to embody affect and desire as well as cognition. Precisely how desire and affect contribute as right-making characteristics of an act remains undeveloped and vague in many CE theories.

Unique theoretical assumptions of the individual approaches emerge most clearly in answer to the question "How do children learn?" Indoctrination emphasizes repetition, modeling, rewards and punishments, and learning by example. A student learns, in large part, by a passive internalization of the prevailing societal norms. Anecdotal evidence suggests coercive measures to force compliance was frequently employed. VC dismisses this approach as ineffective; children, they suggest, learn by self-analysis, experience, and weighing the consequences of personal choices. Learning occurs as one becomes more aware of his or her own inner values. Cognitive-developmentalists propose learning occurs through direct and democratic participation, by engaging in Socratic dialogues, role-taking exercises, and by individuals resolving cognitive conflict. Moral learning is a process of increasingly sophisticated ideas as to why certain conduct is considered to be right. CE borrows aspects from each of these theories. Modeling, example, stories and internalizing acceptable social codes are imported from the indoctrinative theory. Socratic dialogues and role-taking exercises are endorsed by some character educators but, again, an emphasis on developing proper desires and appropriate emotional reactions and behavioral responses are also stressed.

The direct transmission of values, practice, and the inculcation of habits are signature aspects of the CE model. CD considers this method condescending and "unlikely to leave children with a commitment to that behavior" (Kohn, p. 435). Direct transmission is inherently condescending in that the adult / child relationship relegates children to "passive receptacles to be filled, lumps of clay to be molded, pets to be trained, or computers to be programmed" (p. 434). Following Piaget, CD views true learning to occur when a child actively constructs meaning for himself (Kohn, 1997).

> Children must be invited to reflect on complex issues, to recast them in light of their own experiences and question, to figure out for themselves...what kind of person one ought to be, which traditions are worth keeping, and how to proceed when two basic values seem to be in conflict (Kohn, 1997, p. 435).

For CE, "the kind of person one ought to be" can be transmitted. It need not be discovered anew by each child. One ought to be, among other things, just, responsible, and kind. CE advocates argue that children need not, nor should we expect them, to reinvent the wheel. A child learns by example, with study, and with practice. Against the romanticism of the cognitive-developmentalists, CE distrusts the notion that ethical behavior will spontaneously unfold. And just as children will not "invent" algebra or the proper rules of English grammar, neither should one assume that they will "construct" proper ethical principles on their own.

As it is with the previous questions, each theory has its own view of present society and the type of society it envisions as ideal. The early indoctrinative method has commonly been characterized as viewing society as under a constant threat of moral dissolution from vice and undisciplined natural impulses. Under strict controls, a uniform conformity to conventional norms is possible. VC views society as a product of failed previous methods. As a result, apathy, indifference, and value confusion plague the majority of citizens. An ideal society would be comprised of autonomous individuals pursuing their personal conception of values and goals. Cognitive-developmentalists envision an ideal society to be composed of high level critical thinkers adhering to universal moral principles. Societal norms may vary but Stage 6 citizens will contribute to a society that prizes justice for all. Present society contains a scant minority of Stage 6 citizens. With the proper developmental method this percentage can increase.

Character educators frequently justify the need for their approach with dire current statistics of youth misbehavior. For CE, the threat of the moral dissolution that the early indoctrinative educators feared, has, to a large extent, taken hold and pervades society. CE hopes for a society of high level critical thinkers who also adhere to a set of core ethical principles. CE dismisses the relativism of the VC theory. Although they acknowledge and welcome society's pluralistic composition, specific values are believed to apply to all American citizens (e.g., respect, responsibility, fairness, honesty, integrity, etc.). A society becomes better as more citizens attach and adhere to these values.

Each theory accommodates the emotion of moral shame differently. Nonconformity to conventions creates a shameful condition according to indoctrinative adherents. A person who does not abide by these conventions will feel shame if he considers these conventions binding. The relativism of VC requires a case by case analysis as to when and how someone feels shame. To be theoretically consistent VC is committed to the view that nothing is inherently shameful. So Simon can not maintain that values can not be imposed from external sources and then claim a special dispensation to render judgments on tax-evasion or apathy. In order to avoid contradiction, dishonesty, theoretically can not universally be deemed a shameful condition. The decision not to aspire to be honest must be respected as does the individual who rationalizes honesty can be overridden whenever it proves to threaten his comfort or security. And Simon suggests when a person is clear about his values then shameful conditions will disappear. But this proposition is remarkably simple-minded. Klansmen are perfectly clear about their commitment to objectively shameful and morally repugnant values.

It has been argued that Kohlberg's composition of the moral stages and his emphasis on cognitive operations has the unfortunate result of minimizing the affective dimension in general, and, specifically, of committing Kohlberg to the position that individuals at the early stages of moral development are incapable of being informed and guided by a sense of shame. For the question on how moral shame might affect character development, Kohlberg's narrow focus on adjudicating conflicting moral claims neglects important dimensions of one's moral growth and one's character.

The theory is also troubled by the concern that the transition from Stage 4 to Stage 5 is not logical. How does a conventionalist evolve into a person who adheres to universal principles? How does the transition work? And how and where does moral training fit in with the theory? When does it begin? As a final concern, why should we accept the claim that, at certain stages, all children are at all times shamelessly committed to their own best interest? Egocentrism need not be a vicious egoism. His view of children, by itself, ought to render the theory defective. All these concerns seem to remain unanswered in Kohlberg's work.

Character education, even with an emphasis on the affective dimension, fares no better. Although it appeals to notions of habituation, practice, and lectures from the early indoctrinators and to constructivism and Socratic interchanges from the cognitive developmentalists, the picture of how character develops remains sketchy. This vagueness is compounded by imprecise formulations of guilt, humility, and pride and a complete neglect of shame.

In conclusion, it seems evident from the review of the literature that an explicit and comprehensive answer to how moral shame might affect character development does not emerge from these theories.

An Alternative

Various theories from scholars on how children learn and on what should be taught have been reviewed. Arguments and counter examples have demonstrated that each theory has unique problems. What follows is an alternative proposal of character development and an attempt at locating the proper place of moral shame. In its essential respects this alternative is Aristotelian.

The format of this section begins with notes on Aristotle's theory of moral virtue and good character. This will be followed with an explication of Aristotle's view on how a good character develops. From these sections, an answer to the second research question, "What impact might moral shame have upon one's character development?" can be formulated.

Any suggested moral development program ought to be preceded by a clear conception of virtue and vice. Common sense dictates that if an author is suggesting a method by which people can become virtuous, we should know something of his or her view of virtue. Errors or omissions at this primary stage will infect all subsequent efforts. A fundamental weakness with the value clarification theory is the proposition that the necessary conditions for a value to be right, good, and desirable are a person's autonomous choice, thoughtful commitment, and repeated affirmation of that value. From this position, a method of practical exercises to clarify values evolves. But VC is doomed from the start. To appeal again to the wrongheadedness of racist ideologies, the klansman's choice of and thoughtful commitment to the value of white supremacy does not render that value right, good, and desirable. The klansman has organized his life around a reprehensible goal. Acts that

exemplify this value and which are conducive to attaining this goal are wrong, if not evil. So more than free choice, commitment, and repeated affirmation are needed to distinguish right from wrong and the good from the bad. Some theories avoid this fundamental error; Aristotle's is among them.

Aristotle

An influential, complex, and controversial conception of virtue and of good character can be found in Aristotle's *Nicomachean Ethics* (NE). Aristotle distinguishes two kinds of virtue, intellectual and moral. The development of each kind is distinct: intellectual virtues are developed through learning and experience, moral virtue "is the result of habit" (NE, 1953, 1103a18). The intellectual virtues are excellences in Science, Art, Practical Wisdom, Understanding, and Philosophic Wisdom (Book VI). Aristotle's list of the moral virtues includes courage, temperance, liberality, magnificence, proper ambition, patience, truthfulness, wittiness, friendliness, modesty, and righteous indignation (p. 104).

A moral virtue is defined as "a purposive disposition, lying in a mean that is relative to us and determined by a rational principle and by which a prudent man would determine it" (1107a1-2). Until we understand the meaning of many of these terms, this definition remains far from clear.

First, to begin at the beginning, we need to know what Aristotle means by a purposive disposition. One famous passage from the NE explains how moral virtue is acquired through habit: "we become just by performing just acts, temperate (self-controlled) by performing temperate acts, brave by performing brave ones" (1103b1-2). It is in this way that "like activities produce like dispositions" (1103b20). A disposition, Aristotle suggests, is the

"condition...(by which) we are well or ill disposed in respect (to) feelings" (1105b26). Being properly disposed towards feelings takes practice. "The causes and means that bring about any form of excellence are the same that destroy it, and similarly with art; for it is the result of playing the harp that people become good and bad harpists" (1103b8-10). So, for example, bravery will be exemplified in acts whereby the agent is well disposed, through practice, to respond appropriately to fearful circumstances.

To develop the proper disposition requires the agent to reason and to act so as to hit the mean.

> Moral virtue...is concerned with feelings and actions, and these involve excess, deficiency and a mean. It is possible to feel fear...too much or too little; and both of these are wrong. But to have these feelings at the right times on the right grounds towards the right people for the right motive and in the right way is to feel them to an intermediate, that is to the best, degree; and this is the mark of virtue (1106b15-24).

The mean incorporates an array of considerations: motive, timing, correct objects, and measure. In general, feelings and actions in the mean are characterized as neither too little nor too much. For a number of reasons, this is a complex proposition and the "Aristotelian mean" has generated thousands of pages of critical commentary. One area of contention is that having defined and established the importance of the mean, Aristotle immediately asserts it does not apply to all feelings or all actions. It is impossible to have the right amount of shamelessness or envy or too much justice and temperance.

> Not every action or feeling admits of a mean...some have names that directly connote depravity, such as malice, shamelessness and envy, and among actions adultery, theft and murder. All of these, and more like them, are so called as being evil in themselves...In their case, then, it is impossible to act rightly, one is always wrong (1107a9-15).

From these many examples and "more like them" it is not immediately evident precisely when and where the mean should apply.

Another misconception regarding the mean is to propose that Aristotle intends the mean to be understood as a moderate feeling or act. Clearly this is mistaken since Aristotle would apparently condone as appropriate a heated and intense indignation toward acts of murder or
theft. The concept seems to be further complicated when Aristotle says that the mean ought to be "relative to us". Presumably we are to gain an understanding of this phrase by examples such as charitable contributions from a school teacher and from a corporate executive both can be considered generous while being substantially different amounts. Since the particulars of everyone will be different, there can be no universal principle or hard and fast rule by which we can determine the mean. It is established, when it applies, by perception.

> So it is not easy to define by rule how, and how far, a person may go wrong before he incurs blame; because this depends upon the particular circumstances, and the decision lies with our perception (1126b3-7).

According to the definition of virtue, our perception will be correct if it accords with that of the prudent man. Prudence is the practical wisdom to deliberate correctly about "what is conducive to the good life" (1140a28) and the "rational principle" in moral conduct is prudence (1144b25). Virtues, as moral or intellectual excellences, actualized prudently are intrinsically valuable constituents of this good life.

We can propose two preliminary considerations: 1) the proper education of a child ought to be guided by this target of virtue, and 2) a failure to exercise

these excellences can constitute a shameful condition. An agent will *feel* shame if she has a certain awareness of a discrepancy between her pursuits, feelings, or actions and those of this good life. But what is the good life as Aristotle conceives it?

In the opening paragraphs of the NE, Aristotle writes that every action and every pursuit is thought to aim at some good. If an action aims at some end, that end, by nature, is considered superior to the activity. Therefore some things are extrinsically or instrumentally good - good for procuring something else (e.g., money, medicine) - and some things are intrinsically good - good in themselves (the leisure that money affords, the health that medicine restores). Book 1 of the NE asks and gives the outline of an answer to the question "What is the supreme good for man?". Aristotle tells us: "Human excellence will be the disposition that makes one a good man and causes him to perform his function well" (1106a21). The supreme good will be an intrinsic good and it will be man's true function.

Just as a conception of virtue is essential to a reliable evaluation of a moral development program, some understanding of Aristotle's answer to the ultimate aim is required to locate the appropriate grounds for moral shame as well as an understanding of how children develop so as to participate in this intrinsic good. And since more than one thing is intrinsically good (candidates are the moral and the intellectual virtues), Aristotle's project is to find the supreme intrinsic good or that which is "in accordance with the best and most perfect (virtue or excellence)" (1098a20). This good Aristotle claims will be *eudaimonia* or happiness. Happiness is, of course, defined differently by different people: a hedonist will propose pleasure, a politician will suggest honor or public esteem, while others might propose happiness consists in lavish

material comforts. Aristotle refutes these claims and proposes happiness consists in one of two activities; the best being the exercise of theoretical wisdom or contemplation or, if this is unattainable, second best would be virtuous practical activity (or a life exercising the moral virtues).

Early in *Aristotle and the Human Good,* Richard Kraut devises a chart to demonstrate Aristotle's hierarchical arrangement of goods. Kraut's chart is arranged with the lowest level representing goods desired instrumentally such as wealth. The next row is comprised of goods desirable in themselves, "such as honor...though they are not to be identified with happiness" (Kraut, 1989, p. 6) Next are intrinsically desirable ends - virtuous activities. The hierarchy is arranged with each good on the lower level considered "choiceworthy for the sake of some good on a higher row" (p. 6). Virtuous activity as an end, what Aristotle refers to as the political life, is thus represented on top. Kraut's chart is this:

B

M N

X Y Z

B: ethical activity
M, N: other goods desirable in themselves
X, Y, Z: goods that are conditionally desirable (p. 6)

Kraut continues that the philosophical life, or a life of contemplation, according to Aristotle, is represented by the addition of still another level where [A] = contemplation. The completed hierarchy now reads:

A

B

M N

X Y Z

[A] is, then, man's true function and, by this plan, it is important to note contemplation is exercised by an agent who has the ethical virtues [B]. With this plan of the ultimate aim some insights can emerge regarding instances of moral shame by virtue of miscalculations of the proper hierarchical order or, said another way from S1, failures to live up to values that constitute essential components of living the good life. We can propose further that this hierarchy will afford us a better grasp of the components essential to the moral development of children. To these issues we will turn shortly following some brief comments on possible objections to this arrangement.

Controversy swirls around many Aristotelian assertions. As has been noted, the complexity of Aristotle's thought invites this. At the outset it is conceded this researcher has neither the space nor the talents to resolve interpretive differences which have occupied scholars for years. The modest objective here is to defend the conditionally good status of moral shame and to locate its place in child development while suggesting that to do this Aristotle is a valuable resource largely overlooked by moral developmentalists. Before proceeding, however, two premises of his theory deserve a defense. One is the assertion that humans have a function, the other is that his concept of the mean is ultimately intelligible.

Aristotle's attempt to show that human beings have a proper function can be considered the single most important argument in his discussion of happiness (Kraut, 1989). Happiness, or *the* human good, is defined as "an activity of (the) soul in accordance with virtue, or if there are more kinds of virtue than one, in accordance with the best and most perfect kind" (1098a16-18). An activity "in accordance with virtue" I take to mean an activity which actualizes or makes use of that virtue. Human excellence has been defined as the disposition that causes a person to perform his function well (1106a21). According to the hierarchy Aristotle says that that good which is desirable for itself and for which every other good is desired for its sake is contemplation. Next best is the practical life of virtuous activity.

Some commentators object to the basic concept that human beings have a function. If they could prove their objection it might not be overstating the case to say they would thereby reduce Aristotle's main argument to a house of cards. When Aristotle says "the virtue of a thing is related to its proper function" (1139a16) he claims things have a function. A hammer functions to pound nails, a saw to cut, a horse to run, "carry his rider, and (face) the enemy" (1106a22). The virtue of a hammer would be the proper distribution of weight and hardness, a saw its sharpness, a horse his strength, stamina, and courage. For humans it is the exercise of his highest faculty and excellence in conduct. One expression of a common objection to the function argument is from Eric Moore in his doctoral dissertation, "Desert, Virtue, and Justice" (University of Massachusetts, February 1998). Moore argues there that the function thesis:

> seems to imply that humans are like tools - - they have a particular function, and the virtues are what allows them to perform their function well...However, it does not appear that there *is* a characteristic function of persons. We are not like tools

> in at least one important respect: we were not designed to do anything, either well or poorly, because we were not designed. So, the virtues are not those dispositions which allow us to achieve our function (p. 125-126).

Moore offers no explanation to support his claim "we were not designed". In Aristotelian fashion, Moore does accept the claim that a virtue is "a disposition to do certain acts, and those acts exemplify that virtue" (p. 133). For example, truthfulness is a virtue, someone with this virtue is disposed to tell the truth, and a specific episode of truth-telling is an action that exemplifies this virtue. Moore then argues that having the virtues is a desert base. People of virtue deserve good things; people with vices are not entitled to these same good things. Moore's projects are to present and defend a view that the moral virtues are legitimate desert bases and to argue for a theory of justice that calculates virtuous merit. All these general points accord with Aristotle's ethical system; Moore seems only to resist Aristotle's move of elevating theoretical wisdom to the top of the hierarchy. One justification for a split with Aristotle is that Moore believes there is more than one way to lead a good life and this is represented in his expansion of moral virtues to include artistic, social, and athletic excellences. Presumably these lives can be commensurate. In Moore's list talents for music, painting, and gardening are artistic moral virtues and strength and hand - eye coordination are athletic virtues. Actualizing these virtues entitles someone to good things. And it is a plausible and appealing notion that there are numerous ways to lead a good life.

Moore concedes, with his example of Mike Tyson, that a tension exists between virtues that make a good person with those that make for a good athlete. Being clear about this tension seems important not only in defending

Aristotle's function argument but also for educating the young.

Using Tyson as an example Moore proposes that on the basis of his athletic abilities and talents Tyson is deserving of good things. This seems right. Because of his diligence (one of Moore's moral virtues) Tyson has developed his natural gifts of strength, quick reflexes, and stamina to become one of the world's best current boxers. However, his inability to control his emotions has resulted in numerous assaults on people and allegations that he has raped women. For these crimes he has been repeatedly jailed. So, Moore suggests, an accurate appraisal of Tyson would be that he is a very good boxer, and thereby deserving of social goods, and that he is probably less than a good person, thereby "not deserving of many good things as (a) moral person" (p. 127). But it is not at all clear, if athletic talent is morally virtuous, how this alleviates the tension. Under Moore's scheme developing athletic talent is one way to lead a morally good life.

Many great athletes, musicians, actors, and painters, in order to diligently pursue their art, have left their families and friends devastated and have spent their mature years in a drugged, self-absorbed, and unproductive haze. On the basis of their remarkable works these individuals justly deserve some social goods but it is unlikely we should characterize their lives as happy or attribute much merit to them based on moral virtue. So an obvious way to resolve the apparent tension is to object to Moore's inclusion of athletic, musical, and artistic talents under the umbrella of unqualified moral virtues. I see no reason to assume winning a title fight is a moral victory. For diligence to be morally praiseworthy the activity and motivations have to be assessed. Diligently training for a title fight motivated by, say, a desire to have access to more and more women to treat badly and to earn money to spend on drugs does not qualify as virtuous intentions or activity. Diligence, then, may be a

desert base but it is not an unqualified moral virtue. If, however, athleticism is a moral virtue, then Moore's scheme implies Tyson is *not* deserving of many social goods even though he might win several world titles. For regardless of how diligently Tyson trains, if his training is motivated by base intentions, then his diligence is on the wrong grounds for the wrong motives. Therefore, Tyson has not been "morally diligent" according to the definition of virtue Moore explicitly accepts from Aristotle. Furthermore, Moore offers no explanation of why diligence should be "chosen for its own sake" or how it is intrinsically good. It is hard to imagine how this could be done since it is easy to think of examples of persons working diligently for ignoble ends. Since few people would dispute Tyson is a "good" boxer, Moore's inclusion of athletic talents and diligence as moral virtues does not seem to be persuasive. We might conclude that a person can be deserving of good things based on something other than virtuous merit.

The mere claim that people are not designed does not address Aristotle's assertion that happiness consists in the exercise of a human's highest function - that feature distinct to man. Moore seems to assume his phrase concludes the argument and, without further elaboration, he dismisses the case. But if this refutes the function argument it would imply happiness consists in innumerable activities - pleasure for some, wealth for others or, from Moore's list, the exercise of the moral virtue of hand - eye coordination. Presumably Moore finds Aristotle's attempts to refute these ends as extrinsic, secondary goods to be inconclusive.

One objection to this thesis is found in Martha Nussbaum's article "Shame, Separateness, and Political Unity: Aristotle's Criticism of Plato". Nussbaum offers an example of an assembly line worker, X, at a General Motors plant who performs the same repetitive task all day, day after day. X

may consider himself happy (by exercising his hand - eye coordination). But Nussbaum remarks that "there certain sorts of activities that are unworthy of the diverse capabilities with which most humans are endowed. Even if X likes his work, we can still call it degrading and subhuman, his position a shameful one" (1980, p. 400). When and if a machine is designed to do the work of 10 people, or 100, how will this affect X's self respect? As with a person who dedicates his entire career to campaigning for a politician who is eventually revealed as a thoroughly disreputable character, false beliefs, objectively verifiable to X himself, will demonstrate X's shameful condition. Moore's design argument does not refute Aristotle's rich metaphysical and psychological description of man's higher faculties. Moore may simply believe in a different ontological scheme. Beliefs aside, Moore offers no persuasive argument to discredit Aristotle's function thesis, although the claim that there are innumerable ways to lead a good life is compelling.

Aristotle's rich psychological description introduces an alternative way to understand the doctrine of the mean. His doctrine suggests that a prudent man will organize extrinsic and lower level intrinsic goods so as to contribute optimally to a morally virtuous life or to the maximization of contemplation. The good life, then, is not a composite of all intrinsic goods. For each individual it will be only those amounts of lower level goods that contribute to the good life. As Kraut states: "A perfectly happy life...will have all the goods he needs - not all the goods there are" (1989, p. 308). So a good life is not enhanced by directing one's attention to acquiring more than is needed of extrinsic goods (e.g., money). Such activity will infringe upon time better spent in contemplation. Since the proper amount of goods varies from person to person - just as the proper diet varies for a professional boxer in training from that of a poet or a musician - no precise and universal rule can establish the

mean for everyone as it applies to these lower level goods. Practical wisdom and the autonomous direction of one's own life will determine each person's correct measure.

> Any account of conduct must be stated in outline and not in precise detail...Now questions of conduct and expedience have as little fixity about them as questions of what is healthful...the agents are compelled at every step to think out for themselves what the circumstances demand (1104a1 - 10).

This seems to be why the person with [A] needs [B]. One will be deflected from contemplation by unbridled appetites or malformed dispositions. For each of us, then, the correct decision, he tells us, "lies in our perception" (1126a5). We must work out for ourselves how much is just enough of the lower level goods so as to maximize the upper level intrinsic goods. But what is universally true is that neither too little nor too much of extrinsic goods will contribute optimally to maximizing intrinsic goods. Aristotle has a plausible and appealing theory on how children develop this correct perception which leads to good character.

Notes on the Development of Character in Aristotle's Ethics

Since children cannot have a fixed disposition, their characters cannot yet be truly virtuous. Intuitively this might seem to commit Aristotle to hold a disreputable attitude toward children. Children, it seems, cannot be virtuous. What redeems him, I think, is this. By definition, virtue is more than an isolated act that is good. If it were not, then the coward, who is clearly capable of acting bravely on one occasion, or the habitual liar who tells one truthful statement, could be appraised favorably - in a "snapshot" assessment - at the time of these fleeting moments of uncharacteristic

behavior. Furthermore, a liar or a coward may be motivated, on some specific occasion, to do a good deed only by some perceived immediate extrinsic benefit or immoral aim. Consider the Tyson example. Thus the requirement for an agent to choose the act "for its own sake". So a virtuous act has to be more than an isolated and random performance of, for example, a brave or truthful deed; these deeds must emanate from an agent who is in a particular state of mind. Aristotle makes this explicit.

> Virtuous acts are not done in a just or temperate way merely because *they* have a certain quality, but only if the agent also acts in a certain state, viz. (1) if he knows what he is doing, (2) if he chooses it, and chooses it for its own sake, and (3) if he does it from a fixed and permanent disposition (1105a28-33).

It follows that an assessment of one's character cannot be made without insight into the disposition of the agent. Therefore, good character will be comprised of a fixed disposition to perform virtuous acts, the cognitive awareness of why these acts are good, and a desire to perform them for their intrinsic value.

Motivated by personal advantage, the one episode of truth-telling by the habitual liar fails to meet several of the required conditions. So just as we will not consider the liar to merit the excellence of a truthful disposition on the basis of one true statement, neither should we ascribe virtue to children until they come to understand truthfulness as intrinsically desirable and conducive to a good life. This is not to say children are not fully capable of performing *good* acts from which good habits develop. This is, then, a far more respectful attitude toward children and a more optimistic picture of moral development than that implied in Kohlberg's theory. But since children as yet do not have a clear understanding of what constitutes a good life, how can good character develop?

Myles Burnyeat, in "Aristotle on Learning to Be Good", offers a compelling interpretation of Aristotle's answer. Burnyeat credits Aristotle with a more comprehensive theory than a Socratic or Kohlbergian intellectualism - theories that suggest moral development is predominantly a process of cognitive sophistications. Burnyeat also credits Aristotle with a plausible psychological theory.

> A wide range of desires and feelings are shaping patterns of motivation and response in a person well before he comes to a reasoned outlook on his life as a whole, and certainly before he integrates this reflective consciousness with his actual behavior (1980, p. 70).

Living as they do under the sway of desires and emotions young people, Aristotle writes, "often make mistakes" (1128b16). Aristotle does not dispute Matthews's belief that children, even very young children, are genuinely moral agents because "they are capable of sometimes doing the right thing for the right reason" (Matthews, 1994, p. 56). Aristotle conceives of a settled disposition to develop in a sequence of stages with both cognitive and emotional components and by virtue of the blessings of nature, the advantages of a good upbringing, and living in a society hospitable to institutions supportive of virtuous conduct (Aristotle, 1176b; Burnyeat, 1980).

Burnyeat outlines the course of moral development with the use of the rather cryptic Aristotelian terms "the that" (or, to be used here from the Thompson translation, "the fact") and "the because". For a person to get ahold of "the fact" is for that person to know or believe that something, x, is true, as in x is true = x is truthfulness is a virtue. Good parents, teachers, and political leaders impart these "facts". A person can know x is true or believe on authority that x is true and not yet truly understand why x is true. Having "the because" is understanding why x is true.

> The man who knows for himself is someone with "the *because*" - in Aristotle's terms he is a man of practical wisdom equipped with the understanding to work out for himself what to do in the varied circumstances of life (1980, p. 71).

This is a feature of the final stage of moral development. At the first stage, with the advantages of a good upbringing, children will hear about virtuous conduct and the specific moral virtues (e.g., truthfulness, courage, temperance, etc.). They will become familiar with those actions "in accordance" with virtue. What they learn specifically is that these actions are noble and just. This gives a cognitive dimension to developing virtue through habit. For if a requirement of a virtuous act is to choose x for its own sake, habituation must entail more than the mere recognition of x - type acts. The morally developing child has to be on the way to understanding why x is true. Contrary to the critics of indoctrination who charge that habituation is a mindless conformity to authority or a repression of emotion,

> Aristotle's conception of being habituated in good conduct is to be forming correct ideas regarding the nobility of virtuous acts, discerning appropriate exemplifications, and desiring opportunities to directly experience virtuous conduct. The direct experience is accompanied by the pleasures these acts bring; this is another essential step in the process of forming a mature sense of values (Burnyeat, 1980). Since our natures are such that what is thought to be pleasant is what we will pursue, Aristotle considers it of primary importance in early training that pleasure and pain be appreciated in conjunction with the right objects. "True education" Aristotle states, is to learn to be pleased by the right things (1104b).

The instruction appropriate to this age, Joel Kupperman believes, "should center on dogmatic instruction of the central moral norms"

(Kupperman, 1991, p. 175). Kupperman supports this view in three ways. First, children should not be expected to reflectively justify why lying, murder, or theft is wrong. This would simply be age-inappropriate - analogous to sending a novice skier down an expert slope. Second, any society in order to be secure must be able to agree upon some basic set of moral norms without question and to be able to distinguish these from ones that invite respectful disagreement and debate. In the basic set ought to be a promotion of the moral virtues, and clear prohibitions of specific things such as murder, torture, rape, child abuse, mistreating animals, and discrimination. Third, dogmatic instruction in the clear cases is important because moral reflectiveness at the mature stages needs a foundation of habits and attitudes to which one can appeal. Analogously, we should not expect children to read a novel before they learn the alphabet and the basic rules of sentence construction. But we do want all children to read.

So the first stage of moral development is the introduction to and the grasping of moral "facts". The advantages that benefit acquiring "the facts" are the blessings of a receptive temperament, good parents and teachers, and a hospitable society.

The second stage is when the good acts learned through practice become "second nature". At this stage truthfulness begins to characteristically emanate from the child. When an action becomes second nature the person has a cognitive grasp that x is true and begins to emotively respond to x as pleasurable.

> Aristotle holds that to learn to do what is virtuous, to make it a habit or second nature to one, is among other things to learn to enjoy doing it, to come to take pleasure - the appropriate pleasure - in doing it (1980, p.77).

Having been trained, as Aristotle says, "from infancy to feel joy and grief at the right things", the proper attitude toward pleasure and pain is key to developing a good disposition (1104b14). Inappropriate enjoyment of a virtue would be to do acts that exemplify a virtue merely to get one's allowance or to incur favor. Here again we see the important connection between acts and feelings. A person with the wrong motivation or feeling can perform an act which gives the outward appearance of a good act.

The appropriate pleasure of virtuous activity is to enjoy it for its intrinsic value and to appreciate it as a component of the good life irrespective of contingent rewards. Vice, in the same regard, will begin to appear unpleasant. Acts of theft and lying, for instance, to a child in the second stage, begins to lose attractiveness and these acts will feel as though they go against the child's nature. This child need not yet understand why x is true, she only need believe x is true and take pleasure in x type acts. But she is beginning to learn for herself, in part because of the pleasure, that what she has been told is true. How she learns this therefore has both cognitive and emotional components. The step of learning to love an x type act for itself motivates similar action since that which is pleasurable is attractive. She is, therefore, on her way to choosing virtuous activity "for its own sake".

It is here that we can see a failure to do x will cause shame. With the belief that acts in accordance with virtue constitutes the good life, vice seems ignoble and unpleasant. When she fails, she will feel ashamed and pained "internally, not consequentially" (Burnyeat, p. 79). The less well-brought up child, being swayed by feelings of the moment and not cognitively aware that virtue is pleasant will, as Burnyeat says "abstain from wrongdoing not because it is disgraceful...but simply and solely as a means to avoid punishment" (p. 79). External consequences, not a sense of shame, will be the

only deterrent. If the perceived threat of external consequences has little or no force, as is the case in many areas of modern life, the danger to healthy development should now be self-evident. And here it is also important to recall Matthews's devastating objection to Kohlberg's "good boy - nice girl" and the "law and order" stages. Motivated by a concern to avoid punishment is not a moral consideration. Embedded in Kohlberg's theory is a improbable assumption regarding transitions to higher stages.

Aristotle acknowledges that in the developmental picture, as activities become second nature, change from one's initial course becomes difficult. The importance of early education comes through forcefully in this important passage from Aristotle.

> Now if discourses were enough...to make people moral...'Many and fat would be the fees they earned', quite rightly...(but lectures) are incapable of impelling the masses toward human perfection. For it is the nature of the many to be ruled by fear rather than by shame, and to refrain from evil not because of disgrace but because of the punishments...of that which is fine and truly pleasurable they have not even a conception, since they have never had a taste of it...To dislodge by argument habits long embedded in the character is a difficult if not impossible task (1179b3-20).

The second stage of moral development, therefore, seems an appropriate time to judiciously interject, with Socratic interplay, examples that cover Matthews's five dimensions. The variety of models, an increasing clarity in defining characteristics, the added experience of the maturing student to perceive various cases, and adjudicating conflicting moral claims all can begin to teach students the complexity of applying their knowledge from dogmatic instruction to particular cases. Their moral imagination, fueled by noble and just motivations and sensitive to the feelings of others, will only enrich the other dimensions. It is at this stage that Kupperman suggests

teachers dispense with authoritative dogmatic instruction to allow independent perspectives to develop. Moral instruction, to be effective, must accommodate individual circumstance; imposing a rigid blueprint for all will prove futile and is, in light of individual differences, undesirable (Kupperman, 1989). But the "facts" must first be there. If students are debating whether truthfulness is, in fact, a virtue as opposed to, for example, a specific instance when complete honesty will cause unquestionable suffering, then developmentally they have things the wrong way around. The metaphorical Platonic "puppies" will tear at arguments precisely because they do not have hold of the "facts" to which they can use as guides in particular applications.

The final stage in Aristotle's theory of moral development is reached when the agent grasps "the because". Here a person understands virtue to constitute the good life, and he desires virtue for itself. With good fortune, a person's disposition is fixed and she chooses virtue for its own sake. Virtue, she knows is pleasurable because it is noble and the noble is pleasurable because it is good. The mature agent also has the practical wisdom to work out for herself, in her particular circumstance, the right thing to do. She has her lower level goods in perspective and she aspires to maximize the higher level intrinsic goods.

In summary, a good character develops by performing good acts. These acts are introduced to a child by authority figures as being right and good. The child accepts these acts to exemplify virtue on external authority. Through repetition and guided practice the child begins to realize that what she has been told is true and with this belief these acts become pleasurable. Acts that exemplify the virtues begin to become second nature.

As the child matures she begins to see the world in all its complexity as well as to clearly assess her talents and limitations. As an individual in this

world, to be self-respecting, she realizes that to engage in worthy activities is what virtue requires. And to be self-respecting she leads her life rationally, undeterred by unreasoned appetites, undeflected by empty glamour, and not subservient to others in matters of designing and implementing her important life plans.

Her own practical reasoning works out the specific details of the best course for her life plan. She ranks and chooses activities and her reason ensures the plan is objectively worthy and that she can carry it out.

Final Comments on Moral Shame

At 1107a27 in Book II of the *Nicomachean Ethics*, Aristotle refers to a "table" or "diagram" of the virtues and vices. This table is not listed in W. D. Ross's translation (Random House,1968) or in the revised edition (Oxford, 1980), It is listed in J. A. K. Thompson's translation (Penguin, 1953). Whether this is Aristotle's actual diagram is a matter of speculation.

Included in the diagram of moral virtues in the Penguin edition is a virtuous disposition called modesty. But at 1128b10 Aristotle states: "It is not correct to speak of modesty as a kind of virtue because it is more like a feeling than a state". Again at 1128b30 he writes, "Modesty can only be good in a conditional sense...but this is not true of the virtues". And the feeling of shamelessness, along with malice and envy, he lists as feelings that are intrinsically bad. Intrinsically bad things do not admit of a correct or proper degree; however felt or done "it is impossible to act rightly, one is always wrong" (1107a14). So the inclusion of modesty on the list of virtues is suspect for, at least, three reasons. Since shame's deficiency is intrinsically wrong, it seems improper to locate this emotion in a diagram where the proper measure

is a virtue. Second, the text repeatedly and clearly implies it ought not be there; it is not a virtue. Third, it seems unlikely, preposterous perhaps, to suppose Aristotle would advise us to choose a conditionally good thing "for its own sake".

Aristotle does say shame admits of degrees. Modesty is the mean between shamelessness (the deficiency or "too little") and shyness (the extreme or "too much"). Since shamelessness is the extreme, a "sense of shame" might be considered synonymous with "modesty". A shameless person, then, is one without a sense of shame, or, as Nussbaum defines it, a person who "evinces good or confident feelings where we would think a good man right to feel shame" (1980, p. 399). It seems plausible that shamelessness can also apply to a person who displays no particular feeling toward committing a morally wrong act. Either failing to perceive some act as morally wrong or through a complete indifference to moral considerations, a person could be shameless without the good or confident reaction. This idea has textual support in the Rhetoric where Aristotle describes shamelessness to include "contempt or indifference" toward things "likely to involve us in discredit" (1383b17-19). This, then, to me, seems plausible and, dispositionally and developmentally, just as bad. So let's expand the description of a shameless person as "one who is either unperturbed or evinces good or confident feelings where a good man would be right to feel shame". This description seems to fit Aristotle's portrayals of the shameless man as one "who feels too little shame or none at all" (NE, 1108a17) and one who "is not afraid of (disgrace)" (1115a15).

To illustrate a case of shamelessness lets take an uncontroversially wrong act, torture, from the basic norms list for dogmatic instruction. The case is "S tortures a child for pleasure". By uncontroversial I mean the case,

to all rational people, is objectively wrong. From this example we can see for S to be shameless is for S to be both cognitively and emotionally in error.

S is cognitively in error because he lacks the disposition to have feelings of shame in a situation and toward a certain activity agreed to be morally wrong. So S is in error in at least three respects: 1) he fails to exercise human excellences, 2) he is pursuing an activity that degrades himself and/or others, and, 3) he fails to acknowledge the situation of his causing a child needless suffering to be morally wrong. However motivated and by any rational standard the torturing of children is a base activity. S is emotionally in error because his disposition is such that he takes pleasure in an unworthy activity, in a wrong object, and in disgraceful behavior.

A sense of shame is conditionally good because it is an element in the right disposition toward disgraceful behavior and conditions. A person will have a sense of shame, as Nussbaum says, "if the agent has a certain degree of awareness both of the conception of value relative to which (some acts) are shameful and of the nature of his own pursuits" (1980, p. 403). A man of self-respect, she continues, "must be one who reliably pursues activities that...are worthy for a human to pursue (p. 403). A sense of shame, then, acts to designate honorable parameters. To be able to discern these parameters and to be emotionally attached to stay within them is to have cognitive and emotional assets. And to have these assets is conditionally good.

Nussbaum's requirements for a man to be truly self-respecting are that "reason must rule both as legislator, choosing and ranking activities, and as administrator, ensuring that the rational plan is effective" (p. 405). From this we can extract three ways a person may come to *feel* shame. A person may

realize her plan or activity is 1) directed by her appetites, not reason, 2) that her beliefs about the activity or plan are mistaken and now seen as unworthy, or, 3) that she is not the autonomous director of her life plan, but subservient to the practical wisdom of others. Regarding this last consideration, a rationally chosen life plan appeals to objective standards - that which determines what is worthy of humans. Autonomous direction is the practical wisdom to work out the particular details for oneself within the confines of objective standards. These standards establish the hierarchy and each man's practical reason works out the specific details "relative to us".

This consideration suggests a problem with the preliminary definition of moral shame, S1, presented in Chapter 3. Nussbaum appeals to these objective standards and to autonomous self direction in her objection to Rawls's subjective formulation of self-respect. Nussbaum proposes: "Perhaps an ideal of rationality or of the rational judge may need to be built into the initial specifications...of self-respect" (p. 402). Just as has been argued that Rawls mistakenly proposes a condition is not shameful if a person does not *feel* it shameful, and self-respect is a *feeling* of capacity or conviction, so to is S1, open to objection on the grounds that it is too subjective. S1 reads:

S1: X is moral shame = df. X is a painful, self-regarding feeling of diminishment that acknowledges an agent has failed to live up to some value. That value the agent: 1) regards as important; 2) considers it to constitute an essential component of living a good life; 3) acknowledges it to be a value to which he ought to aspire; and, 4) one that a better self would have more closely approximated.

In this definition moral shame has no objective standard by which to measure the "value" as important. Each person's conception of living a good life will dictate where and how sub-standard deviations occur. So a

legitimate objection could be this is no improvement over Rawls's definition of self-respect or over the inherent relativism of values clarification. The elasticity of personal circumstance ought to be built into how virtues are exemplified, not in disputing what the virtues are. For some individuals cognitive errors of omission, personal inclination, or poor upbringing will effectively eliminate objectively virtuous activities (e.g., truthfulness, courage, patience, etc.) from the field of values "to which (all) ought to aspire". According to S1, if one does not think of some virtue as important, one will not be diminished by its absence. It is simply not there to calculate. But it is the case that good teachers and friends of good character will at times enlighten us as to the limitations of our self perceptions.

Appealing to Aristotelian principles of objectively worthy human activity, S1 might be repaired in the following way.

S2: X is moral shame = df. X is a painful, self-regarding feeling of diminishment that acknowledges an agent has failed to live up to what virtue requires. That virtue the agent now: 1) regards as a worthy disposition; 2) considers it to constitute an essential component of living a good life; and, 3) acknowledges it to be a virtue a prudent person would have more closely approximated.

With S2 it still is the case that if a person is unaware of a virtue then he will be unashamed of his failure to exemplify that virtue in action. It does seem with S2 that that person may now be objectively blameworthy for his ignorance whereas under S1 the person himself established the range of the virtues. I do not know how to repair it otherwise.

With this revised definition and with insights from the Aristotelian model of development we can proceed to answer Research Question #2.

An Answer to Research Question #2

If one accepts the Aristotelian model of moral development, then it follows that a sense of shame will have a beneficial influence on the formation of a person's character. In the above I have tried to argue why there are persuasive reasons to accept this model as preferable to many alternatives. An answer to the Research Question #2: "What impact might moral shame have on character development?" requires us to view shame at each of three broadly construed developmental stages. These stages correspond with the sequence of Aristotle's theory of acquiring the virtues.

With an example from a psychological research study of a fifteen month old infant comforting another crying infant, Gareth Matthews supports his contention that very young children "are capable of recognizing and accepting a moral obligation" (1994, p. 56). This observation effectively discredits Kohlberg's theory of the stages of moral development, calls into question many remarks by Piaget, and implies the narrow "toileting" focus of Erikson's preadolescent "shame" stage to be significantly inadequate. Nothing in Aristotle's work suggests disagreement with Matthews's subtle but devastating objection to Kohlberg's theory.

In Book X of the NE, Aristotle writes: "Some thinkers hold that it is by nature that people become good, others that it is by habit, and others that it is by instruction" (1179b18). In what follows in his text it appears Aristotle held that all three contribute, in this order, to moral development.

Just as it seems to him that some people are born with a temperament that is resistant to "discussion and instruction", others, "by some divine dispensation", are receptive (1179b20). But anyone who spends time on a

playground with young children, as I do, will observe when a child is hurt, there will frequently be a universal display of concern. It will not be unusual for a half a dozen of these "egocentric" toddlers to suspend their play, take matters into their own hands, and assist the injured boy or girl to the nearest teacher or to the nurse's office. So Matthews is right. Very young children recognize moral obligation, are sensitive to the suffering of others, and are capable of doing the right thing for the right reason. More than a promise of reward and the threat of punishment is present in a young child's cognitive and emotional machinery. So at an early age, children are capable of doing good deeds and are innately sensitive to right and wrong. How else are we to understand modern psychology's claim that the saturation of television and movies with violent images "desensitizes" young children to the suffering of others? To be "desensitized" implies a prior state of sensitiveness. Whether all psychologists recognize this implication, they are, perhaps inadvertently, attributing an admirable quality to very young children. Given this, they would do well to take Aristotle in all seriousness when he advises true education is learning to take pleasure in, and to be pained by, the right objects.

At the first stage of moral development (approximately preschool and elementary grade levels) and with the benefit of good parents and teachers, children are introduced to the basic moral "facts". How they are introduced to these facts is extremely important. It is obvious that children of this age will have little knowledge of the concept of character as a disposition which is unified over time and they will be cognitively and emotionally limited in their experience and social interactions. So instruction, as Kupperman insists, ought to be dogmatic. But if we attribute the ability to do genuinely good acts to children, we must, at the same time, recognize that when they make mistakes their response can be, or is, more than a fear of punishment. So,

again, there must be some capacity for a sense of shame that is innately present and capable of development. Shame will impact on these children in clear instances of violating these central moral norms, in reaction to causing others to suffer, and in cases of perpetuating injustice, as in, perhaps, hoarding all the cookies for oneself. Getting ahold of the moral "facts" is also getting ahold of instances of clear violations. Allowing an insensitivity to violations to fester is negligent instruction as is engaging in inappropriate debates that confound cognitive and emotional reactions.

This innate sense of shame will emerge as a beneficial force as specific acts become second nature in the second stage (roughly the late elementary to, perhaps, the high school years). Guided by instruction in good conduct, children begin to learn first hand that what they have been told is true. With luck, the pain a child feels following a mistake or a transgression has an internal component. This, it seems, is what Myles Burnyeat means when he says "Shame is the semivirtue of the learner" (1980, p. 78). Having learned that "x is true" is more than a mere conformity to the content of adult instruction as a child begins to take pleasure in x - type acts. Following a mistake, feeling ashamed expresses a desire to do better.

At this second stage the child has yet to take appropriate pleasure in acts that exemplify the virtues because of the intrinsic value of virtuous conduct. And the things that appear pleasant will be many. So mistakes will happen. But now virtue is beginning to be desired as noble and just conduct and a scheme of values - as the noble and the just - will become integrated with what the young person desires.

Moral instruction at this second stage can emphasis the idea that character is a disposition unified over time which encompasses commitments, projects, goals, and responsible conduct. These young students will be

receptive to the analogy that developing a virtuous character can be likened to the effort and time it takes to be an accomplished musician, a good athlete, or a formidable chess player. Children can clearly see they are, as yet, none of these through no fault of their own.

Rules and principles dogmatically instilled can be examined, the adjudication of conflicting moral claims can be discussed, and the range of cases of the exemplifications of the virtues and the vices can be expanded. A respect for multiple perspectives can be introduced and the appropriate and inappropriate applications - or limits - of tolerance explored. This stage seems critical for whether one develops a proper sense of shame as a semi-virtuous disposition or merely one learns to only fear punishment. A sense of shame will offer new motivations for virtuous conduct as one's practical reason becomes integrated with one's desires. With only a fear of punishment the taste for wrong objects can become habits. Shame will impact upon character development with the cognitive assemblage of honorable parameters and in the emotive attachment to objects as well as in thoughtful reactions to weaknesses.

Early on, certain acts will be avoided because they are simply wrong. It is not as yet clear *why* they are wrong. This would seem to suggest the child will be somewhat perplexed by *why* she feels ashamed. But the second stage brings a cognitive awareness that wrong is synonymous with disgraceful and that disgrace connects with one's character. This signifies that a child is inspired by her sense of shame to avoid wrong acts by a fear of disgrace. Part of the reason shame or disgrace is unattractive is because it is an internal pain.

At the third stage (high school and on) when a disposition is becoming settled or fixed, shame can contribute to one's character to guard against a

weakness of will. Good character has to be characterized as a strong character. Strength of character can be characterized as the resistance to emotional temptations and cognitive confusions. A mature character desires the noble and the just. As Aristotle puts it:

> The appetitive element in a temperate man should harmonize with reason; for the noble is the mark at which both aim, and the temperate man desires the things he ought, as he ought, and when he ought, and this is what reason directs (1119b15-18).

Aristotle's temperate person has ahold of the "facts" and the "because". She desires virtuous conduct and the exercise of intellectual virtue for itself. Irrespective of reward or public acknowledgment, she desires virtue for its nobility. And her desire is, according to Aristotle, an uncorrupted and incorruptible conformity with what her reason asserts to be good.

This view of the final developmental stage sheds new light on the remarks introduced early in this paper that appeared so perplexing in their apparent contradictory nature. Shame is becoming to youth because all that seems pleasant is not so. All desire is yet to become reasonable. Part of the struggle the continent man experiences is that there seems to be compelling reasons to do something wrong. Some feature or features of an immoral alternative appears tempting.

When cognition and desire are in tune, affect - or pleasure in the good - becomes a prime motivation. A sense of shame, as an awareness of honorable parameters, informs cognition of the particulars in one's unique situation. The continent man will feel ashamed merely to be tempted and to have struggled. The incontinent man will be ashamed to have succumbed to desires that betray his hierarchical scheme of values. And to have succumbed, as Aristotle says, and to feel as one should following a failure, is to feel an emotion

that "ought not be felt" (1128b20). Introducing shame into the state of affairs seen as an organic unity "does not make it good" (1128b33). Seen as a whole a state of affairs that one is ashamed of is predominantly bad. But, as has been argued, it is not the feeling of shame that makes it so.

Modern life, as everyone knows and as the interviews to follow show, is indeed hard. Cowardly administrators, discouraged teachers, ill-prepared and overwhelmed parents, entertainment executive's stupidity and base motivations, and an association with influential, developmentally young peers conspire to corrupt a young person's alignment of desire and affect with reason. Modern science even calls into question a person's natural receptiveness and ability to develop temperance with speculations on genetic predispositions to infidelity, substance abuse, and uncontrollable emotional reactions that require medication. Even the fear of punishment as an incentive one should outgrow, resurfaces, as the interviews show, to tempt us in new, profound, and many displays of ineffectiveness to be justly administered. Recent high profile cases testify to the fact that with an expensive defense team and shameless acts of perjury and obstruction of justice, one can "get away" with virtually anything.

True Aristotelian temperance may be an attribute of saints. In many areas of our lives - throughout our lives - continence is probably the best most can hope for. All the more reason to keep a sense of shame operative.

Chapter Summary

This chapter reviewed five theories of moral development which influenced different programs for public school moral education programs. These theories were: the indoctrinative model, the theories of cognitive-

developmentalists Piaget, Simon, and Kohlberg, and a modern character education theory. Following an explication of each theory, how the emotion of moral shame is accommodated within the theory is reviewed. Next an Aristotelian theory of moral development is examined. It is argued that this theory of moral development is superior to the others previously reviewed by virtue of its comprehensive analysis of character development, its sophisticated view of virtue, and its recognition of shame's beneficial properties.

The Aristotlelian theory proposes a person develops moral character in three stages. With good teachers and good fortune, in the first stage a child is introduced to the basic moral facts. In the second stage the child becomes emotionally attached to acts that exemplify the virtues. At this stage virtuous activity becomes second nature, or, said another way, habitual. The pleasure that one experiences from virtuous activity pleases one internally and motivates continued virtuous activity. At the final stage, a person's cognitions, affections, and desires harmonize to pursue the noble and just.

This model of moral development permits the answer to Research Question #2 to conform to these three broad stages of growth. Moral shame alerts and sensitizes the young child to violations of the basic moral principles. In the second stage, shame pains the child internally. Mistakes are recognized as disgraceful and are seen as contributing to one's disposition. Shame in the final stage is the recognition that a person acted unreasonably. Right reason recognizes virtue to contribute to a happy, noble life. Reasonable behavior requires one to desire and to perform good acts. Shame is the realization that one has, in some way, erred.

Interviews with children and teenagers as well as a priest, a rabbi, a state trooper, teachers, and others testify to the fact that moral shame ought to play a more prominent role in human experience than many of the theories of moral education recognize. Pertinent excerpts from these interviews are assembled in the next chapter.

CHAPTER 5

ANALYSIS OF DATA

Introduction

This study presents an analytical definition of moral shame, reviews a series of alternative definitions, and describes several operative school-based approaches to moral education. Interviews were conducted with a variety of individuals who are professionally and/or personally involved with children to ascertain their views - and their perceptions of the views of children - on education, society, the development of character, and moral shame.

This study is guided by three research questions. These are:

1. What is the emotion of moral shame?
2. What impact might moral shame have on character development?
3. What implications for the reform of school curriculum are suggested by the findings of this study?

As a result of the review both of the related literature in Chapter 3 and of moral development programs in Chapter 4, an answer to the first research question was proposed. It reads:

S2: X is moral shame = df. X is a painful, self-regarding feeling of diminishment that acknowledges an agent has failed to live up to what virtue requires. That virtue the agent: 1) regards as a worthy disposition; 2) considers it to constitute an essential component of living a good life; and, 3) acknowledges it to be a virtue a prudent person would have more closely approximated.

Chapter 4 reviewed school-based moral education theories and programs and discussed how these theories accommodated moral shame practically and conceptually. In light of the analytical definition, S2, various objections to each theory were presented. An Aristotelian model was presented and defended as a preferable alternative.

Surveys and interviews were conducted to determine how different individuals perceive moral shame to impact upon character development and to investigate whether their insights and their experience contribute to possible suggestions for curriculum reform.

The analysis of the data corresponds to aspects of the second and third research questions. These research questions provided the aim by which to design the interview guide (see Appendix B). One aim of the interviews is to determine whether the participants consider moral shame to contribute to moral progress and to the development of good character (Research Question #2). A second aim in conducting the interviews is to seek possible suggestions for reforms to the public school curriculum from the insights of the participants (Research Question #3).

The words of each participant provided the descriptive accounts, or raw data, of the phenomena under study. Data from each interview were transcribed, sorted, and complied according to the general interview guide. This guide will be outlined following the introduction of the participants.

Participants

Twenty-four participants were interviewed for this study. Twenty-one individuals agreed to have their interviews tape-recorded. The interview tapes were transcribed verbatim by the researcher and a professional secretary.

From the interview transcripts, excerpts were extracted and organized according to themes relevant to the second and third research questions.

To protect the identity of the participants, all proper names have been omitted. Participants are referred to only by their occupation (e. g., Priest, Probation Officer, Elementary School Teacher #1, #2, etc.). All proper names of schools and town departments, as in Amherst Police Department, are omitted if these names might lead to disclosing the identity of the participant. When a proper name appears in the transcripts and this section is quoted, the name is replaced with the designation "XXX". In quoted sections, words enclosed in parentheses are those of the researcher. These words were inserted only to help clarify the meaning of the participant's comments.

The participants were:

Priest: 71 years old, retired in 1998, converted to Catholicism, pastor at his last assignment for over 12 years.

State Trooper: 46, has worked as a trooper for 23 years, employed in Western Massachusetts, began career working through the District Attorney's office in several towns.

Social Worker (DSS): mid-forties, Supervisor of the Department of Social Services - western Massachusetts, supervises staff of six case workers for adolescents, oversees roughly one hundred and twenty cases "at any given time".

Judge: fifty, hears cases in three different western Massachusetts District courts, served on the bench for five years, previously criminal lawyer, married, two children.

High School English Teacher (HSET): Late fifties, taught in the same school for thirty-three years, married, three children.

High School Teacher / Aide #2 (HSTA): Early fifties, six years experience at the high school level, artist, vocational arts instructor, married, two children.

Juvenile Probation Officer (JPO): Female, late forties, JPO for 15 years, Bachelor's degree in Criminal Justice and Psychology, Master's degree in Criminal Justice Administration, Associate's degree in court stenography, oversees approximately 400 cases a year which are primarily Children in Need of Services complaints (CHINS).

Counselor #1 (C1): fifty-one year-old female, twelve years at the elementary school level, masters degree, married, two children.

Counselor #2 (C2): forty year old female, seven years in human service organization, three years at the elementary school level, master of science in counseling, divorced.

High-school student #1 (HS1): 17 year-old male, 10th grader, spent two years in an court mandated alternative school setting, lives in foster home, Mother has history of substance abuse, does not know who his father is, has lived in mother's home with an abusive boyfriend, serious criminal record (e.g., assault

and battery, grand theft, breaking and entering, violating probation, lewd and lascivious charges), has older sister who is deaf, older brother who is mentally impaired, believes their problems are attributable to Mother's past substance abuse.

High-school student #2 (HS2): 15 year-old female, sexually-active, uses recreational drugs, may drop out of high-school, failed every class in ninth-grade, father alcoholic, younger brother has serious record with police, lives with mother and mother's boyfriend, does not get along with either

High-school student #3 (HS3): sixteen year old senior, lives with biological parents, honor student, accomplished athlete

Rabbi: fifty, served 10 years as rabbi in a small town's only synagogue

Elementary School Teachers: Eight elementary school teachers from three different schools were interviewed. These individuals range in age from the mid-twenties to the early fifties. The grade levels that they teach range from first to sixth. They are designated by order of appearance, an in EST #1, followed by his or her classroom grade (e.g., EST #1 - 2nd).

Organization of the Data Analysis

The data are organized and presented according to the interview format. The first portion of the interview sought to gather biographical data from each participant. Some of this information is listed above. For those participants who are, in some capacity, professional service providers for children, intake

questions attempted to establish what the nature of their profession is, how long they have been employed in this profession, and the characteristics of the population they serve. When interviewing children and adolescents, the researcher began by drawing a standard genogram with the student. In most cases this procedure helped to establish a suitable comfort level to pursue further questions.

The second interview question attempted to elicit information regarding a participant's view of the current state of affairs of: a) the family; b) children's view of the importance and purpose of education; c) an overview of the general nature of student's behavior; and, d) children's level of respect for authority figures.

The third interview question asked participants how they thought children respond to acts of wrong-doing. That was, in some instances, followed by a fourth question which attempted to establish what connection that act, and the reaction to that act, might have to authoritative directives or prohibitions.

In some instances the fourth question was expanded to include the participant's view on what motivates ethical behavior. The researcher's objective was to determine, in the view of these participants, why people behave. Is the motivation grounded in a fear of punishment or social disgrace? Or to people behave because it is the honorable thing to do?

Delimitations

Over six hundred and fifty students and more than thirty professional adults participated in this study. The overwhelming majority of these participants are white and middle class. All reside in New England. All school

personnel and students who were surveyed or interviewed attend or are employed in public schools.

Future studies would benefit by conducting surveys with an more diverse population in different geographical locations. A comparison of results complied among more diverse public school settings as well as with those from private and religious schools might offer intriguing contrasts. Furthermore, the survey results included in this study do not cover all grades in middle and high school. No results from a college age population were gathered. Canvassing these grades in future studies would give a more accurate basis for comparison and analysis.

This study was hampered by the researcher's relative inexperience in the art of interviewing and in designing research instruments. While reviewing the transcripts it became apparent that many avenues to investigate as well as points that merited clarification were missed. The Detention survey instrument was administered to allow respondents anonymity. This made it impossible to follow up on brief but provocative answers. This restriction detracted from the data that could have been studied in Chapter 5.

Interview Questions and Excerpts

The Family

There is an enormous body of research on the family and its effect on child development. Divorce rates and the detrimental effect of a family breakup on children is well documented. Many scholarly research projects have been conducted on the added stress one-parent families experience as well as the negative effects on children of fatherless families.

These concerns and the apparent lack of parenting skills were concerns expressed by most of the participants. A representative comment comes from a high school teacher.

> (HSET) Modeling is either non-existent or negative. We are talking two-thirds of the population in this school...or take that down to 30 or 40%,...they just don't have it. Parents are either single and overwhelmed with their children or there is just too much work and responsibility for them to supervise their kids. They don't know how to set standards...Parents, today more than ever, need to be educated.

Much the same concern is heard from a juvenile probation officer [JPO] and a Department of Social Services supervisor [DSS].

> [JPO] I don't know how it got from there to here...but it has in the last 20 or 30 years. I think there has been a big change in parenting skills...The parental abilities to not only curb delinquent behavior, but to teach the basics of right and wrong and to be able to handle their children out in public. (I)t is just not there. So I spend as much time teaching parents to parent as I do teaching children (that) they have to abide by the law.

> [DSS] These kids just don't have (life skills) because dads have never been there, they don't know who dad is, or where dad or mom is...Those (parents) who are there are so overwhelmed,... just overwhelmed. They can't manage it all. They (the children) don't have anyone to connect with. And I think that that is where some of the hopelessness is driven from.

Little here seems new or surprising. These comments seem to reflect and support common perceptions on the difficulties facing and the apparent shortcomings of current parenting. But, three points of interest concerning families were not expected by the researcher. These were: 1) the number of high school students living on their own, 2) the number of very young children who live in one-parent or divorced households, and, 3) the tendency

of custodial parents and guardians to offer excuses for their child's misbehavior.

In this order, pertinent interview excerpts are as follows.

> [HSET] So many kids in our school have jobs now. They have jobs after school...some...start at 3:00 o'clock...and end at 9:00 o'clock at night - sometimes even 10:00 o'clock. I notice more and more kids getting their own apartments. When I first came here for a kid to be living in an apartment was almost like somebody getting a divorce in the 1920s. Now it's normal to be living in an apartment and to be holding a job to pay for the apartment.
>
> Interviewer: Could you give me a rough percentage?
>
> [HSET] I'm going to say between 5 and 10%.
>
> Interviewer: That's alot of kids.
>
> [HSET] Yeah, that's alot of kids.

It is also common knowledge that the nation is plagued by a divorce rate of approximately fifty percent. However, what was not clear to this researcher at the outset of the study is that, in some regions, that rate accurately applies to households with very young children. The researcher assumed that couples would be more stable when their children were young and couples would tend to separate or divorce with more frequency after their children had grown.

This exchange occurred in an interview with two third-grade teachers.

> [EST #1- 3rd] Easily half the children in my class live with one parent or are living with guardians or foster parents. I'd be surprised if half had both parents at home.
>
> [EST#2 - 3rd] That sounds right for my class, too. I've never asked them, but if you check the emergency cards I bet that's what you'd find.

Informal conversations with a number of other elementary school teachers confirmed that the ratio of children living in single parent households compared with children living with both biological parents is thought to be 1:1.

Another startling observation that emerged from the interviews was the commonplace occurrence of parents attempting to deflect the responsibility for misdeeds away from their child. Deeds cited in the interviews range from the relatively minor incidents of undone homework, failure to bring in signed permission slips, and inappropriate dress to more serious issues of fighting, lying, stealing, and dangerous bus behavior. "Some parents", one teacher [EST #3 - 6th] remarked, "will first try to find out what another (classmate) might have done to cause their child to behave this way. I've had some (parents) put me on the defensive."

One elementary school teacher spoke of an incident of a first grader who stole money from a class fund collected to buy trees for a school beatification project. The evidence clearly identified one particular boy. In numerous private conversations, the boy repeatedly lied about his involvement. Finally he admitted he had, in fact, stolen the money. After school, on the day of the boy's admission, the teacher called his mother.

> [EST #4 - 1st] The mother made all sorts of excuses for his behavior. "His father is working nights now, the house has been upside-down lately, it's understandable because we're having money troubles" those kinds of things. I couldn't believe what I was hearing. I think stealing and lying are pretty serious things. It was as if she didn't want to be bothered about what her son did. Not only that but I got the impression since she wasn't bothered about it - I shouldn't be either. She said something to me like she'd appreciate it if I didn't bring it up again because she'd take care of it and it really wasn't any of my business.

A school counselor (C#1) confirmed that parental excuses are commonplace.

> Well, just yesterday I called a mother about (a boy) who has been fighting on the playground. She told me (he) has been getting teased to and from school. If we had done something about that, the fighting would never have happened. I guess she's trying to tell us part of this - it's our fault.

Parent's attempts to minimize or excuse student misbehavior is not confined to the elementary schools. With her daughter on report for suspected marijuana use on school grounds, a high school teacher recalls the parent's response to this allegation by asking: "Do you know what's been going on in our house lately?' and "Do you know the stress she has been under?" (See Appendix F).

Several teachers lamented the loss of the days when children feared the double punishment they would receive when they went home from school. The obvious implication is that in years past teachers could rely on parents to support them in disciplinary matters. Although some parents do, many teachers mentioned this is not support one can automatically rely on. Secondly, several teachers expressed frustration with their administrators. After citing a few examples of incidents where the administration failed to follow through on his efforts in disciplinary issues [HSTA] remarked simply, "After you get burned a few times, you learn". The high school English teacher voiced similar concern.

> [HSET] Teachers do get up in arms when the administration tends to side with the students...Whether there is a verbal or physical confrontation with a student and a teacher, the administration, in the opinion of many teachers, goes out of its way to satisfy the students...So, I'm afraid to say that that puts out a pretty awful message to kids - which basically means they run this institution ultimately. Right?

As a result, many teachers comment they are increasingly hesitant to involve parents or administrators in issues of student misbehavior.

In summary, themes which emerged in discussions of the family with the participants were: 1) parents have less time and/or a compromised ability to consistently model and to insist upon appropriate behavior from their children; 2) more children are working long hours after school; 3) teachers cannot rely on parents or administrators to support their efforts at discipline, and, as a result, many teachers overlook obvious infractions for fear of student reprisals or in anticipation of administrative non-support; and, 4) several participants in education referred to a dual trend of parents offering excuses for their child's misbehavior with administrators tending to appease the parents and child rather than support the teacher.

One could conclude that if the behavior of school-aged children and adolescents is to be restrained by an external fear of punishment, then the perceived force of this restraint is relatively weak.

Children's View of the Importance of Education

Over the past decade there has been a concerted effort - one might say a media blitz - to impress upon children the importance of a education. Famous television and movie personalities make commercials, full-page newspaper advertisements are run, and popular musicians make announcements at concerts aimed at encouraging children to stay in school. Nevertheless, many educators remain disheartened by the attitudes of the students themselves.

> [HSET] There is more gross indifference to the education process itself. There is more of an attitude from the students, "Did I pass? Did I get the 'D' ?" I hear (that) from alot of kids today - "Did I get the 'D' ? The sense of academic achievement is not there. It is just not a big deal. They know they can get into the Community College and they know they can get in to some other college.

One inference we might draw is that more and more students do not consider knowledge to be intrinsically valuable. Indeed, this notion may be true. But what seems uncontroversial is that an increasing number of students appear to require proof of how their academic achievements will be converted into financial compensation. One problem of this view lies in the fact that for many students academic achievement does not appear to be defined by or synonymous with high levels of learning, critical thinking skills, or reading comprehension. For many achievement can merely be measured by the acquisition of a diploma or a degree. This seems to be the sense in which we are to understand how a 'D' is thought to be adequate. And most students who wonder if they "got the D" acknowledge, by virtue of the question, that they are not sure if they have done the bare minimum in order to pass. No one harbors any illusions of the student having developed a love for learning after these kinds of dialogues.

An elementary school counselor speculated that one reason for student indifference to education is the comparative unattractiveness of the learning process.

> [C1] Reading is way down on the list (of what children enjoy). It takes time to relax, to find a quiet spot to get into reading. Kids want to be immediately involved, immediately gratified. Computer games do that, and TV...And there's peer pressure, too. I've never seen a group of kids (who) had reading in common...but they get really animated talking about (computer) games and horror flicks.

This same counselor commented on the possible influence of the internet. Bits of knowledge now seem adequate to many students and parents. The sustained effort to master a subject now seems burdensome. The counselor suspects many students have the the impression that knowledge can be "punched up" and printed out in mere seconds.

The concerns for financial reward and the minimal effort to pass emerge in the interviews during discussions of homework. In this interview topic two unexpected themes emerged: 1) students have begun to dictate homework policy in the upper grades; and, 2) some administrators foster the attitude that the learning that occurs through homework be justified or defined by the level of future job readiness skills.

The idea that learning and homework are subject to a job compartmentalization or time constraints is evident in the following.

> (HSET) In general there is less of an emphasis on doing homework. That's another big change in attitude or aspiration or value. Homework just doesn't seem to be what it used to be. More and more kids, even (honor student) kids are saying that, "Weekends are my own", and prior to that teachers were of the mind (that) weekends were the time teachers gave kids more homework. They would be able to do it and it was a time they could get caught up on the behind work. That seemed to be logical and that seemed to work. Now we've got (students) saying, "We aren't going to do homework if it comes on (week-ends)." So what the teachers have done, generally speaking, is to give weekend assignments and have them due on Tuesdays instead of Monday...Many kids reason, "Look, I work here five days a week, that's my job, now it's over".

A local newspaper article reports similar teacher and administrative reactions in Boston high schools. In Boston it is being reported that "as many as two-thirds of students...will ignore homework assignments. In response, at

least 5 percent of Boston teachers have simply stopped assigning homework" (Nicole Cusano, "Greenfield *Recorder*", 23 November 1998).

> Very few kids do homework, and those that do it, every other sheet has the same ridiculous answers", he (David Dingley, English teacher, Madison Park High School) said. "They cheat", said Dingley, who assigns homework three or four times a week. "You have to keep giving it, but it is hard to base a lesson on homework if the work isn't being done" (Cusano, 23 Nov. 98).

Two months after the publication of this statistic in the *Recorder*, Time magazine cited a Boston *Globe* article which puts the percentage of teachers who have stopped giving homework at 20% (Morse, "Too Much Homework!", Time, 25 January 1999). But in the Time article, homework seems to be an area that currently admits of extremes. The cover story focuses mainly on children in wealthy suburbs and private schools that are overwhelmed by the amount of homework they are assigned.

One aspect in common appears to be the justification of economic advantage as an incentive to do homework. This comes through clearly in the comments of an area administrator in the *Recorder* report.

> Frances Zak, principal at the Ralph C. Mahar Regional High School in Orange, said he didn't have statistics on homework at his own school. But he said homework is more important than ever at a time when the *job market* requires *strong communication* and *math skills* (Cusano, 23 Nov. 98, italics added).

Zak's emphasis on mathematics and communication skills demonstrates a shift from the educational priorities from HSET's early years in teaching.

> [HSET] When I first came into teaching I think the general mission was to make children literate, make children moral, make them aesthetically conscious, make them love learning for the sake of learning...I think our mission statement now excludes some of that stuff. I think other forces in this country of ours are trying to move it in the direction of more pragmatism. I think the mission now seems to be career pathways and the school to work...They are asking us to operate almost as these kinds of vocational schools. We are not here to prepare kids for vocations, we are here to prepare them for life.

Although her students are young to be contemplating possible vocations, an elementary counselor commented that on the basis of the fifth and sixth graders she knows, the media blitz does not appear to have been effective.

> My kids from impoverished backgrounds don't seem to understand they can get out of (poverty) with an education. They don't have much motivation to go to college. When I do hear something about how they will make a living it's I want to be a rock star or I'll marry somebody with alot of money.

To summarize, in the themes that emerged in the discussions of children's view of education, children are perceived: 1) to want material justifications for how effort spent on schoolwork with be rewarded; 2) to be more attracted to those activities that offer immediate gratification; and, 3) to assume, in the upper grades, that they are entitled to participate in administrative decisions regarding, specifically, homework assignments. Complaints from interview participants regarding homework are that too few children do enough or do it adequately while national news articles report some teachers have stopped assigning it or assign far too much.

Perceptions of Student School Behavior

Elementary school teachers and a high school teacher all report gradual changes in student behavior. A third grade teacher [EST #5 - 3rd] remarked that she is shocked by the lack of common courtesy displayed by her students. "I guess their parents never talked to these kids about common courtesy...At this level I shouldn't have to teach them to say thank you or excuse me." Another teacher [EST #6 - 4th] spoke of the lack of deference shown to adults in the hallways and the stairwells. "Children must think I'm suppose to move for them or stop my conversation with another teacher (to speak with them)". When the high school teacher began his career, "you would never hear of a young woman using the heavy 'f' word...now it is so common". In one high school, it is not a matter of overhearing vulgarities, some of it is directed at teachers.

> [HSET] I feel threatened because with kids today...they will snap at you. They are very angry. They will humiliate you if they can. They will do whatever they can to strike back. It isn't like it use to be many years ago when you could say something to a student and...he would feel a certain...presence there on your part. Today, students do not find it an issue to curse teachers.

An interview with a social service provider testifies to the fact that even with the children who chronically misbehave, the seriousness of their misbehavior has increased.

> [DSS] I have been seeing these kids for 20 years and working with this population of kids and I don't see these kids as the same kind of kids I saw 10 years ago, or even 6 or 7 years ago. The population I work with here are CHINS (Children in Need of Services) kids. The CHINS law was never designed to manage the types of behaviors these kids are presenting. You know the CHINS statue was developed for kids who ran away from home a

> couple of times...The kids that are coming through now with CHINS petitions have multi-level problems. They are failing in school, they are out for weeks at a time, they are substance-abusing. Regardless of all the education you give them they are incredibly sexually promiscuous...I don't remember these kids having so much chaos at home...the violence is much more extreme than it was. So I do see a different phenomena happening here. I'm not sure exactly what it is, but these kids are acting out much more recklessly and much more destructively then I think they ever did before.

The explanation given for some of this misbehavior is that the effects of poor parental modeling are not always immediately apparent. Some parents who displayed delinquent behaviors when their children were young, apparently assume that since they now have reformed, their children should - or will - automatically model this new parental example. The social worker views this as a myth.

> [DSS] (A) very consistent (element) to all the kids (whom) we see is the chaos that they experience, the trauma they experience when they were young. It is not ongoing. It doesn't have to be. And this (fact) confuses parents. When these kids come in here and I sit down with a mom who appears to be very intact with me, doing a wonderful job today, and can't figure out for the life of her what her child is reacting to, why he's behaving this way. What these kids are reacting to is what they got from their parents in their early years - the very, very critical years. And I find out (as young children, they) were witnesses or victims of sexual abuse (or they were) witnesses of domestic violence. All those lines got very blurred very early on for those kids (as) to what is acceptable, to what you grow up believing, and what is okay. And that is what I'm talking about in terms of what kids really know is right or wrong. They are reacting to what was presented to them in those very early, critical years...These kids basically need re-parenting.

In the experience of the DSS worker, the population of children she deals with do not think reflectively nor do they, in her estimation, exhibit moral imagination. The implications of the following exchange are troubling.

Interviewer: Do these kids realize how dangerous their behavior is?

[DSS] I don't think these kids stop to think at all, to question, or think about the effects (their behavior) has on themselves...I am talking about very significant abuse here because it is a part of the culture of their group and it is okay and acceptable by their group.

Interviewer: You mean if it's approved of by their group then it's acceptable behavior?

[DSS] Yes.

Interviewer: Can't they think for themselves?

[DSS] There is very little reflection or projecting (on) any of the consequences that may be on themselves - let alone on other people.

Interviewer: Why is that?

[DSS] They just don't seem to have the time.

Interviewer: The time?

[DSS] Yeah. I think so. What really strikes me is that even alot of the kids that make it through high school or graduate from college really don't get time to sit down and think about much of the future other than "How am I going to make enough money to get my own place and pay for my car?", and things like that. Even for the kids that get alot of family support - financially, emotionally, whatever, it is just scary. Day to day stuff is very scary even for the put together kids.

Interviewer: Are you saying most all kids are preoccupied with material things?

[DSS] Survival, I think. All kids seem to have a sort of shattered sense of security.

Interviewer: That's sad.

[DSS] Yep. It really is.

Worries about car payments hardly constitutes a survival issue, but this may be quibbling over word choices. What does seem clear is in the view of many social service providers, many children and adolescents are focusing on lower level extrinsic goods. An important theme to be revisited is why do so many children appear to be morally unreflective? It is clear that the DSS worker believes most children today are otherwise preoccupied.

Themes that emerged from discussions concerning student behavior can be summarized as: 1) many younger children are believed to be entering the early grades unversed in basic manners and deference to adults; 2) for a segment of the population, destructive behaviors are at dangerously high levels; 3) a significant population of children are openly hostile toward authority figures; and, most importantly, 4) there is a perception that many children are morally unreflective.

Children's Level of Respect for Authority Figures

In an interview with a Rabbi, he recalled a conversation he had had with a young woman in the mid 60s. At that time, he considered her view to be representative of many of the young people toward authority figures. Moreover, he considers this view to be prevalent today.

> [Rabbi] I remember talking with this young woman...and she was saying the difference between my generation and (hers was) that I thought that the government was upstanding and right and I was dismayed when I found out that they lied to me. She started out with the assumption that they lied to her and so she had no expectation of righteousness out there...I think that to the extent that you think that the system and the world is corrupt, then you know whether you get punished or you don't get punished, doesn't mean alot because it is not coming from a place that is just in its own self. So, if you can get away with it, okay.

This attitude would rate very low on a Kohlbergian stage theory. And this young woman's logic is not very impressive. From her premises to conclude, "If you can get away with it, okay" can be classified as both fallacious and repugnant. Unpunished wrong-doing is still wrong irrespective of the supposed level of governmental corruption. It is not clear how shame will affect her character development. Presumably she, at one time, derived her values from societal conventions. Since the authority who established these conventions has proven to have been corrupted, supposedly the conventions are thereby negated or invalid. Now one might suppose for her to violate a convention will not elicit moral shame. But for her to then suggest one ought to get away with whatever one can implies such a person now concentrates on maximizing her own good, however that is construed. Better had she appealed to some higher notion (e.g. the spirit of the law, personal commitment, or what morality requires).

The priest believes this woman's view is prevalent among the young.

> [Priest] It's the authority that is gone. And I would contend that one of the reasons that there is no respect for authority or anyone else is because there is no respect for self. I watch kids on Main Street...they have no regard for themselves...I think that one of the things that brings disrespect for authority is that everything tells us that we must have what we want. You watch television. What it is is you can't live without this bicycle, or whatever...It not being obedient to authority and being a law abiding citizen, it is getting enough money for everything you want. And if you don't have the money, you'll get it anyway you can. And, of course, there is no morality in that.

Three beliefs are advanced here. First, it is assumed that most adult authority has eroded. Second, the notion that young people have no respect for others because they have no respect for themselves has taken on the status

of received wisdom. The priest may have thought he was stating the obvious. But this notion does not seem to be necessarily true. Most of the children I interviewed for this study had relatively high opinions of themselves. Not all of them thought highly of others. Nothing seems paradoxical here. One can easily imagine an agent, who, however deluded, thinks highly of him or herself while having disdain for everyone else. In the earlier section on self-esteem this point was discussed.

The third point is that the priest reiterates the social worker's observation that a percentage of young people seem consumed by material things. He seems to imply that those who acquire these things illegally tend to be morally unreflective regarding the means of acquisition (e.g., by deception or theft). As the priest observes, this disposition entails either a disregard or a certain contempt for authority, for laws, and for religious commandments.

In an attempt to verify the frequently stated observation that a large percentage of children appear to have little respect for authority, the researcher devised and conducted a survey that asks participants to rank fifteen professions on a scale from 1 to 5. A score of 1 signifies the participant has little or no respect for individuals engaged in that specific profession and a score of 5 signifies the participant highly regards those individuals (see Table 1). From the fifteen professions, five that can be regarded as authority figures (Mother, Teacher, Priest, Judge, Police Officer) were extracted and ranked in order (see Table 2).

The aim of the survey was threefold. One objective was to determine how the authority figures would actually fare. Second, it was of interest to the researcher to see how the rankings would change as children matured. Third, the researcher was curious to see if the rankings of those professions that are usually associated with liberal compensation (e.g. professional athletes,

lawyers, movie actors, etc.) would support the comments of the participants who suggest many children appear to value money (or material things) above all else.

For the researcher the survey had surprising results. It is noteworthy that there is little variation in the scores across grade levels. In particular the scores between the 2nd through the 6th grades are remarkably consistent. Mother, lawyer, stock broker, television actors, priest, and rock musicians fluctuate less than .65 across all grades. And, according to Table 2, authority figures ranked relatively high. For instance, the profession of priest - although low among the authority figures - ranked higher than a lawyer and a rock musician while scoring comparably to a movie actor/actress and a professional athlete. For second and third graders this seems to be a sophisticated, yet unlikely, response. An encouraging result was that up to and including the sixth grade, mother, police, and teachers scored above 4.0 and in some cases significantly higher. And professions in athletics, acting, and law - obviously well-paided occupations - scored only moderately. There seems to be much reason for optimism here (See Tables 1 and 2).

It might be objected that the survey merely asks children what they think, or, less impressively, what they think adults would like them to think. Psychological experiments and studies have persuasively demonstrated that it is one thing to say what we might do or what we believe and quite another, in real life, to act upon these statements and beliefs (Hartshorne and May, 1930; Milgram, 1974). It may also be objected that surveys cannot distinguish between what a person's character is and what that person pretends to be or incorrectly believes him or herself to be.

Table 1. Level of Respect for Professions by Grade Level

Occupation	2nd	3rd	4th	5th	6th	9th	12th	Teachers
Pro. Athlete	3.61	3.83	3.94	3.6	3.92	3.45	3.2	2.38
Movie Actor	3.13	3.52	3.8	3.83	3.66	3.39	3.38	2.62
Politician	3.48	2.81	3.43	2.88	3.24	2.53	3.53	2.86
Veterinarian	4.2	4.77	4	4.02	4.07	3.45	4.05	4.48
Rock Musician	2.57	3.24	3.17	3.14	3.56	2.97	3.04	2.1
Priest	3.91	3.75	3.6	3.72	3.75	3.55	3.81	4.1
Television actor	3.57	3.65	3.52	3.58	3.52	3.05	3.05	2.55
School Teacher	4.54	4.4	4.41	4.28	4.01	3.31	4.12	4.71
Doctor	4.33	4.47	4.03	4.52	4.23	4.11	4.72	4.48
Judge	3.26	3.51	3.51	3.5	3.58	3.61	4.2	4.19
Stock Broker	3.04	2.95	2.96	2.84	2.56	2.5	2.81	2.83
Police Officer	4.26	4.65	4.59	4.68	4.19	2.9	3.92	4.31
Car Salesman	2.84	2.74	2.7	2.29	2.32	2.16	2.19	1.98
Lawyer	3.35	3.23	3.57	3.45	3.53	3.2	3.27	3.14
Full-Time Mother	4.38	4.28	4.84	4.61	4.72	4.22	4.93	4.81
N	69	91	115	92	106	64	74	42

Table 2. Rank Order of Authority Figures by Grade Level

2nd	3rd	4th	5th	6th	9th	12th	Teachers
Teacher	-----	Mother	Police	Mother	Mother	Mother	Mother
Mother	Police	Police	Mother	-----	-----	—	Teacher
-----	-----	Teacher	-----	Police	Judge	Judge	-----
Police	-----	-----	Teacher	-----	Priest	Teacher	-----
-----	Teacher	-----	-----	Teacher	-----	—	Police
Priest	Mother	-----	-----	-----	-----	Police	Judge
-----	-----	-----	Priest	Priest	Teacher	Priest	Priest
-----	Priest	Priest	-----	-----	-----		
-----	-----	-----	-----	Judge	-----		
-----	-----	Judge	Judge		Police		
Judge	Judge						

An example that illustrates both these ideas comes from the researcher's experience administering the Wechsler Intelligence Scale for Children - Third Edition (WISC-III). In five years the researcher has given the WISC-III to well over five hundred elementary school children between the ages of six and twelve. Of these five hundred students, although disproportionally white and lower middle class, several races and most socioeconomic brackets are represented. One question on the comprehension section asks: "What are you supposed to do if you find someone's wallet or purse in a store?".

Appropriate two point answers include: turn it into the cashier, to the owner, or to a security guard, give it to the police, and mail it if there is an ID. In the researcher's experience a very small number of the youngest students could not think of an answer. At all ages, however, the great majority of students do offer something in response. Yet only *one* student responded with a devilish smirk, "I'd keep it" and he quickly retracted this answer. The point being: Clearly not *all* children, or adults, would return the wallet. We leave it to the reader to estimate the approximate ratio.

In an recent article, Howard Gardner objects to assessing intelligence solely with standardized "paper and pencil" instruments. One objection is that these tests frequently contain questions that admit of cultural bias. Gardner illustrates this point with the question cited in the text above. His objection reads:

> Some class bias are obvious....Others are more subtle. Suppose the question is what one should do with money found on the street. Although ordinarily one might turn it over to the police, what if one had a hungry child? Or what if the police force were known to be hostile to members of one's ethnic group? Only a canonical response...would be scored as correct (1999, p. 70).

But Gardner is injecting a conflicting moral claim that is not present in the original WISC-III question. He may have been thinking of Kohlberg's Heinz dilemma. And Kohlberg would not have classified the Heinz example as a dilemma unless stealing were not considered to be wrong. He sought to determine the level of cognitive sophistication by means of adjudicating conflicting moral claims. His dilemma essentially asks "What would be required to override one's obligation to respect another person's property?". But every child the researcher tested recognizes - barring a moral conflict - that a person is "supposed" to return lost property. So all the children recognized their primary moral obligation. Whether one does return the wallet is another matter. But that, as all these children recognize, is not the question. The operative word is "supposed". Personal circumstance aside, viewing the test results in this way is encouraging.

One can concede the points suggested by the psychological studies and from various testing experiences regarding actual behavior and still find reasons for optimism. The point of asking children to rank professions was an attempt to elicit a response which weighs a student's recognition respect as opposed to their appraisal respect. This asks a student to report what respect they consider is due the office of full-time mothering, police work, or the political life, not their individual assessments of their mother, their local police officers, or Bill Clinton. As the researcher administered this survey, he was careful to make this perfectly clear to each class. So even if children responded with what they think adults would like them to think, there is still an indication that, if the responsibilities of these professions are met, then 1) children are aware that they merit respect, or 2) it is the case that they acknowledge others consider them to be honorable. Even if we accept the

weaker of the two alternatives - children acknowledge that since adults consider certain professions to be honorable, then they should too - it is still the case that when these children are contemplating vocations for themselves, this consideration is there to be weighed in their calculations.

Another reason for optimism is that the authority figures ranked relatively high. Even if deeds do not always coincide with words, it is a hopeful sign that those professions that advocate high ideals (learning, family, legal and moral behavior) are recognized by children as meriting respect. One conclusion to draw from this is that adults in the professions that enjoy recognition respect have an obligation to conduct themselves so as to merit a high level of appraisal respect.

To summarize the themes of the responses to this question: 1) the topic of moral unreflectiveness surfaced again; 2) a prevalent view among many professionals is that adult authority has seriously eroded; and, 3) results from the respect for professions survey suggest that the recognition respect for authority-figure occupations is high.

If it is a reliable and valid finding that among those elementary and secondary school children surveyed, recognition respect for positions of authority is high, then one can justifiably infer that these children will feel some obligation to abide by authoritative standards or directives. These standards and directives will affect a child's thinking and emotions. But a breach between survey responses and actual conduct does seem to exist. Does this disparity signify a reaction of guilt or shame? Interview question #3 pursues this apparent disconnection.

Children's View of Legal and Ethical Wrongdoing

Distinct new themes emerged in the interviews regarding how some young people seem to respond to legal and ethical wrongdoing. Following Jeffrie Murphy's definition of repentance (Chapter 3, pg. 67), one hopes if someone were to commit some moral transgression or legally prohibited act that agent would, at the very least, remorsefully accept responsibility for his act, be sensitive to the harm he caused, "repudiate the aspects of (his) character that generated the act", and resolve to reform and/or make amends (Murphy, p. 3). If an agent reacted to a moral wrongdoing in this way, then, we might submit, that person is capable of making, or has made, moral progress. The emergent themes from the interviews on Question 3 suggest there are a multitude of barriers to this moral progress.

Two related themes expressed were that many young people appear to be genuinely unrepentant for wrongdoing as well as unintimidated by the possible consequences they might face from authority figures if they were to be apprehended. Regardless of the specific evidence in individual cases, denying personal responsibility for wrongdoing is a common reaction observed by a juvenile probation officer.

> [JPO] I don't think they come here at first thinking any specific way about their transgression because I think most kids come here thinking they have been victimized. The cops just happen to grab them...they are on their case...They don't admit any guilt or that they are accountable for their behavior. It is always somebody else. And if they don't accept any guilt, then they can't change - they will never change. You know it's always some excuse, but they *all* are angry for having been caught or victimized (italics added).

One worry about children with this attitude is that there might be some justification for it. If the child's experience supports the notion that "everyone's doing it", say, smoking marijuana, then he might consider his arrest to be somewhat arbitrary. And if he views pot-smoking as legally or morally justifiable - or something soon to be legalized - then prosecution for it will be seen as a type of victimization. A Catholic priest attributes such an attitude to be justified by the prevalent belief that one's conscience can override all religious, ethical, and legal proscriptions.

> [Priest] There's no sense of sin, there is just a thing of being caught. You see, there is just no idea of sin. Sin, of course, is the breaking of God's law, it's going against the divine law and I think all sense of... any kind of natural law is (also) gone. There is no such thing because we are heavy in this "it's all your conscience" is the rule. That is the guide to your behavior - a guide from reality. So consequently, if you feel it is perfectly alright what you are doing then it is alright, there is no sin involved...The kids aren't sorry they have done something to upset their parents, they are sorry they have been curtailed in what they want to do.

The perception of arbitrary arrest is exacerbated for some offenders by their view that the court system is incapable of exacting just punishments in the great majority of cases. The researcher visited two court houses - each twice - on juvenile day to simply observe the moods of the people who were there waiting to appear before the court. The emotions that the majority of the children and adolescents appeared to exhibit on all four occasions might be best described as ranging from a mild annoyance at an inconvenience to outright disdain. Whatever these emotions were, they seemed far removed from feelings of disgrace or guilt. Other interview participants had stronger reactions to the mood of the waiting defendants.

[Priest] I thought "What is this? Some kind of class outing?" But no, these are the ones being hauled into court. Incredible! It was chaos!

[State Trooper] The attitude in the hallway just reeks!...In XXX they're not scared at all. It's like we're going to get the revolving door treatment, it's just another day in paradise. I see that in the hallway.

On this question of the emotional response to appearing in court, the following exchange occurred with the Probation Officer.

Interviewer: I have noticed when I have been here (in court) that there are juveniles sitting around on the benches and they appear to be very cavalier. I don't know if this is a youthful bravado - a front they are putting on - or if they are genuinely unaffected by the process. I have been in court with elementary school children and I've been amazed at how contemptuous they are of - apparently - all authority figures.

[JPO] I think alot of it is bravado, but I'm not going to brush it off - because in court you're going to see kids that are going to be alot tougher because they are with their peers so they have to come off as really cool...But do I see alot of kids that breakdown and cry or show great remorse? Usually not until they see the handcuffs being put on them and they are being brought out of the courtroom and then all of a sudden they realize that there are intense consequences...You have to get to that point of really showing them that you are going to follow through because not many people in these kids lives ever follow through as far as (doing) what they say they are going to do.

What is unfortunate is that the probation officer observes "great remorse" to coincide only with "intense consequences". Of the children who appear, only a small percentage are led away in handcuffs. So one explanation for this relaxed or unaffected demeanor is that many offenders seem to know that it is unlikely they will ever be punished. It seems clear to the judges, to the police, and to the offenders that the likelihood of intense consequences is remote.

Interviewer: I talked with a police chief in Athol and he told me that he had seen a study that says that a very high percentage of kids believe that the chances of being apprehended, brought before a court, sentenced, and then to have to serve their full sentence is very slight. Literally one in a million he said - if that's possible. Somewhere along the line (these children believe) they'll get off or their case will be dropped. And the study goes on to say the kids are precisely right. I wonder if this accounts for the cavalier attitude I see in the hallways and in the courtroom.

Judge: I think that that is true. I think that is absolutely true and it's almost like a badge of honor to come before the court. We don't do anything within the system to discourage that. For instance if you come to XXX Court on juvenile day you will see wall to wall people, wall to wall kids, and what goes on in the corridor is beyond our control. We don't have any way to deal with that physically...There is supposed to be a certain amount of confidentially involved when there are juveniles involved, but it is everyone else's business. Kids are getting together and laughing at the system, as to what occurs, the noise that occurs.

One of the most interesting themes to emerge from the interviews is a reason which helps explain the apparent cavalier demeanor, or response, of youthful offenders to ethical and legal transgressions. Some offenders calculate the magnitude of their wrong-doing by how they feel those who have been trespassed against should react to the transgression. According to many offenders, an appropriate response would be how the offender himself would feel if it happened to him. By an inability of the criminal to empathize with the actual suffering his or her crime causes, the seriousness of many crimes, in turn, is devalued. A school shooting incident is a case in point.

The "Boston Globe" reports Evan Ramsey,16, admitted to shooting and killing his principal, one student, and to wounding two others. The Globe reports Ramsey had this to say about how the families of the injured parties should react.

> But he was less apologetic when asked about the effect of the crimes on friends and relatives of the victims: "I think I've (expletive) these people's lives up - temporarily. And if they're not (expletive) morons they'll get on with their life. What happened was really screwed up, but that don't mean that they should just stop living and stop doing what they were doing before (Steve Fainaru, Boston Globe, 20 October 1998).

Similar sentiments were expressed by a high school student who was interviewed. A relevant portion of that interview with this 15 year old reads:

> [HSS #1] I still steal cars once in awhile. Just for the excitement. Plus I don't get to drive much, But I have never gotten caught for it, so I really haven't had a chance to think about it.
>
> Interviewer: Would you think more about it if you were to get caught?
>
> [HSS #1] Well, I would probably think about a better way to do it. What do you mean, How do I feel about it?
>
> Interviewer: Well, you said that you felt bad when you stole that last car and...
>
> [HSS #1] Yeah, but I didn't get to take it out of the driveway. It was basically they had to wake up in the morning and see it halfway down the road because I accidentally snapped the ignition and I couldn't get it started. It was getting too early.
>
> Interviewer: So you felt bad about the snapped ignition...
>
> [HSS #1] Maybe because I didn't get to drive it around first. I don't know.
>
> Interviewer: Then you're not feeling sorry for the people.
>
> [HSS #1] Maybe. Maybe I am, maybe I'm not. I guess I don't know how I feel about it. Some things I don't feel bad about. Drugs and alcohol I don't care because it's not good for them. Like I will steal somebody's cooler of beer. I don't really care. Who cares if they have to go buy more. I just take it. I know if it was mine I would be pissed and I would try to find out who did it, but I wouldn't sit there for the rest of my life and worry about it. If the

car was stolen, it was stolen. I get pissed when someone steals my bag of weed or something, but I get over it. If that's how I feel about people then that's how I expect them to feel about me in the same way. Even if they don't, oh well.

Interviewer: So if they are really upset that their car was stolen or that their house had been broken into, they'd be overreacting?

[HSS #1] Yeah. Get over it!

Later in the interview HSS #1 expressed concern over the possibility of being arrested for stealing cars. He believed that because of his previous record, mandatory jail time would result from a car theft conviction. Unclear as to the nature of the concern the researcher attempted to gain clarification.

Interviewer: Do you feel guilty afterward?

[HSS #1] I don't know if I would call it guilt or if I would call it worrying. Maybe I didn't wipe off all my fingerprints. I worry about protection. Did I remember to get all my tools? My fingerprints might be on something I forgot.

Interviewer: Oh, I get it. I think. How long do you worry?

[HSS #1] Coupla days. Cops don't show up by then, they're not coming.

At one point in a subsequent interview with another high school student the researcher addressed a range of cases. HSS #2's matter-of-factness over widespread wrongdoing seemed significant to the researcher.

Interviewer: I'm going to list off a few things and I would like you to tell me, not what you think I'd like to hear, but what you think most kids you know think about these things? Okay? How do you think most kids you know feel about stealing from stores?

[HSS #2] Kids enjoy it.

Interviewer: How about stealing from the phone company?

[HSS #2] What do you mean by that?

Interviewer: Well, credit card fraud, charging calls to someone else.

[HSS #2] They don't care. My friends steal from each other, so stealing from the phone company is nothing' to them.

Interviewer: How about cheating at school?

[HSS #2] If it benefits them? I don't know anyone really who'd care about that. I mean, I know there are some good kids in my school - they do their homework and study - but most of them don't care.

Interviewer: So if they had the opportunity to cheat on a test they would?

[HSS #2] Yeah.

Interviewer: Okay, what do you think most of your friends think about cheating the government - like not paying their taxes?

[HSS #2] I'd say all of them would if they had the chance.

Interviewer: Do teachers ever bring up any discussions about some of these things - like cheating or stealing - here at XXX?

[HSS #2] No.

The themes that emerged from the third research question support the impression that many youthful offenders appear unrepentant in response to their supposed wrongdoing as well as unaffected by the possible punishments that might be imposed. There is also the impression that many children have what we might call an "episodic life view". "Snapshots" of ethical behavior can stand alone; they need not connect with the past nor the future. At the risk of stretching the metaphor too far, when a snapshot is not pleasing, it never is put in a picture album; it is disposable. And this might explain the

impression of concerned observers that many children appear to be morally unreflective. An episodic life view need not calculate discrete acts in the global self-assessment of one's character. And this is a different type of rationalization from the view that a particular act is out-of-character or that one acted under coercion or from some fatalistic predetermination. This view suggests ethical conduct and one's character is not unified over time but the result of a subjective and selective memory of only discrete and disjointed acts or "scenes". No one suggests this is advisable. It does, however, appear to be happening. An elementary school counselor articulated the episodic life view in this way.

> [C1] I think TV and movies are largely responsible. Kids see so many acts of violence and people just go on with their lives - if they're left standing. "Pulp Fiction" is an example. It's all out of sequence, just disjointed acts of violence. There's no connection to how people are after (committing violent acts). And the "Die Hard" movies. Bruce Willis is in those too. Hundreds of people get killed and at the end he (Willis) is reunited with his family with some kind of happy ending. After killing all those people he looks fine. It's back to life as usual. I think kids are acting like that - though not to that degree obviously. But it's a very skewed sense of reality.

Interview question #4 attempts to examine the emotions and the beliefs of the episodic life view in more detail.

Motivational Forces

When asked, "What do you believe is a stronger motivational force for people - external restraints (e.g., fear of punishment, the fear or social disgrace, ostracism from the community) or internal restraints (e.g., personal morality)?" a State Police Officer responded that he believes the hold of social sanctions on families and individuals has significantly weakened because the

community, through uninvolvement, is perceived by many observers to tacitly condone misbehavior.

> [State Trooper] I asked some other (police officers) when I knew I was coming, "What do you think? What do you think about shame?" I think they all were a little to quick to say - police in general - "Nobody cares". Still I have to admit that they are kind of right, they don't care. I really think alot of people just don't care. Even some good people just want these problems to go away and in a way they don't care either. I think the social perception that a criminal gets...is kind of like saying "Okay just go away and do it, I don't care. Just go do it over there in your corner and don't bother me. It's alright if you want to do it. That's not really social disgrace, it's not. It's acceptance and condonement. Just go over there, right? There is a place for everything and the place for *it* is over there.

An interview with a Rabbi suggests that, for the Jewish community, this is significant change that has occurred only within the last fifteen years.

> [Rabbi] There was a great deal held under wraps in Jewish homes and I think it has opened up in the last fifteen years. It was a disgrace if you were unemployed, whether somebody (in your family) had a mental disease, whether someone had substance abuse problems, whether there was violence in the house. Those kinds of things were not talked about in public (because) to be part of America you had to be good otherwise we were outsiders. Outsiders were dismissible...So in order to secure one's place in America's society you had to be good.

To be dismissed or ostracized by one's social group has traditionally been a powerful incentive to abide by the prevailing conventions. Asked about internal versus external restraints, the Rabbi related this incident from the 60s that lends credence to the power of ostracism.

> [Rabbi] In some ways I don't know the answer. I don't know what's going on in people's minds, but I know in some settings it's the push of the community on the individual. There was this

(situation) that took place in Boston in the late 60's which the community really got down on this slum landlord. He had this property and his tenants had tried to get him to work and upgrade it and he just ignored them. The tenants at one point brought him in front of the court in Boston. The court said there were obligations the tenants had abused and that the landlord had abused...But...what they said was until he agreed to do (the repairs) that no Jewish institution may grant him any privileges. In part what made that work was even the Jewish social settings went along with that, so that the country club would not allow him membership. And that became very public shame in terms of the community saying we are going to name this person and put him in a position of excommunication until he complies with this requirement...There is really nothing in most places where you can bring that kind of pressure to bear. You know if someone was doing something in XXX or whatever town and the community said they wanted to publicly call that person to task, there is really no mechanism to do that. You don't have any authority or framework to do that in most places. That story in Boston is a somewhat unique example, but it is a powerful one for what it offers. And there is a piece of me, when we talk about how to move people, that thinks it is increasingly (important) that the community has a role to play, though it is not clear to me how you get to a place where the community can play that.

Much of the force behind the early indoctrinative model of moral development was propelled by the cohesiveness of the family, the school, the community, and the church in transmitting the same message to children. If it is true that adult authority has seriously eroded, that church attendance is down, that parents and teachers are often at odds with one another, one worry is what then constitutes this modern "social group" for children today. The composition of each child's social group would seem to vary greatly in contemporary society. This concern, for the high school English teacher, accounts for a "futility we are sensing in the schools (which) is the same type of futility we are sensing out of the schools - in society in general: this lack of control that the adult population has on the younger population". The priest expresses a similar thought, remarking: "Today there is no discipline because there is no morality and you have nothing to hold over their heads". Recall the

DSS supervisor who implied for many children the influence of one's peer's will override other "groups". When binding social conventions for these adolescents are self-imposed they can be profoundly misguided. To come to see these conventions as misguided seems unlikely if, as the DSS supervisor testifies, these children don't "stop to think at all".

Recent social science studies on binding conventions offer neither encouraging results nor hopeful predictions. In "Moral Credibility and Crime", Paul Robinson summarizes some preliminary research findings on why people are predisposed to lawful behavior. His findings suggest social disapproval to be one of three important independent variables which encourage people to obey laws.

> Beyond the threat of legal punishment, people obey the law because they fear the disapproval of their social group and because they generally see themselves as moral beings who want to do the right thing as they perceive it...But one key condition must exist if personal moral commitment and the power of social disapproval are to be harnessed: criminal law must be seen by the potential offender's social group as an authoritative source of what is moral, of what is right...More specifically, the social science studies suggest, the extent of the law's power to gain compliance depends upon the extent of the law's moral credibility (Atlantic Monthly, March, 1995, pp. 75-6).

Robinson suggests that people will obey the law, or feel some compulsion to obey the law, more readily if: 1) they perceive the law to be an "authoritative source" of what is moral, and, 2) they believe the law will be applied justly (1995). By applied justly, Robinson means people get what they deserve. This is clear from his clarification of the term "moral authority".

> By "moral credibility" and "moral authority" I mean criminal law's reputation for punishing those who deserve it, under rules perceived as just...and where punishment is deserved, imposing the amount deserved - no more and no less (p. 76).

If this is true, it is cause for worry for Robinson cites specific percentages to show, according to his definition, that the law has no moral authority.

> The overall conviction rate among those arrested is 30 percent. Fewer than half of those convicted are sentenced to prison...the median time served by those actually sentenced...ranges from 5.5 years for murder to 2.2 years for kidnapping to 1.4 years for arson (p. 73).

For the threat of punishment to regain "moral authority" Robinson lists several necessary reforms that need to take place. Among these are: a substantial revision of parole, abolishing probation, the reform of rulings on what can be submitted or repressed as trial evidence, eliminating diplomatic immunity, expanding the powers of the police, and significant revisions of plea bargaining guidelines (1995). We can speculate that virtually no thoughtful observer expects these reforms to happen anytime soon.

A state police officer expressed the discouragement his colleagues feel regarding the ability of the police to assist the courts in exacting just punishments.

> [State Trooper] I'll tell you after O. J. (Simpson) all the cops - ALL THE COPS - are so bad (negative) about going to court...As bad as it was before O. J. , it's ten times worse now. You can't get anything. It's like the attorneys are putting in stuff that's almost asking you to prove your existence...They come up with everything, like "Prove you were on duty that day". I'm not kidding you. It's that bad...All you have to do is make the slightest mistake in any of your (evidence) readings and your case is out the window. I mean the attorneys know it and the criminals know it because they are getting off more and more routinely...They tried to make the L. A. P. D. into a conspiring police department, and they are making it the same (for police) in every courtroom.

Robinson's suggested legal reforms might help to create a more just state of affairs (as in, more people will get precisely what they deserve), but his argument is grounded in a dubious philosophical principle. When Robinson states that the "key condition" to harness the power of personal morality and social disapproval lies in the recognition that the authoritative source of what is right is criminal law's efficiency rates of punishment, he elevates law above morality. This suggests one's personal morality is defined by and confined to the parameters of lawful behavior. Social disapproval is similarly constricted, if not more so, since public disclosure is required. But a good person is more than a law-abiding citizen. Motivated by self-interest someone can technically obey all the existing laws begrudgingly. Morality is clearly broader than lawful behavior.

The primary difficulty is the inherent circularity of his argument. Robinson claims a person will be more readily disposed to obey the law if he perceives the law to be moral. A law is moral if that law is applied justly. When a law is applied justly - exacting the appropriate punishment when deserved - than it is moral. So Robinson appeals to the notion of the just application of a law to define moral, and he appeals to the notion of moral to define the just application of law. In Robinson's axiology, or theory of value, morally right is contingent upon a just application of rewards and punishments. But this would seem to be a necessary condition of whether a state of affairs is just or unjust and not whether it is moral or immoral.

From the findings of his own research Robinson concludes the justice system does not punish all those who deserve it. Those who are punished often receive unjustly light sentences: serving 5.5 years for murder, if you are one of the 3 out of 10 to be convicted - hardly seems the numbers that would deter most potential offenders. This too Robinson concedes.

> Deterrence requires that potential offenders think about the consequences of their actions, as many fail to do...Unfortunately for deterrence,...(they) think the threat of capture and punishment applies to others but not to them. Unlike the other guy, *they* will avoid detection by taking the necessary precautions...(and) if a robber faces a mere four percent chance of going to prison, why should it matter to him whether the likely sentence is two years or ten years? (1995, pp. 73-74).

From his own research statistics and according to the premises of his argument, this is Robinson's conclusion: present laws have no moral authority. What this argument overlooks is that, regardless of conviction rates and just punishments, some acts are intrinsically wrong. So, because of a flawed axiology, a second problem with Robinson's theory is that it cannot account for bad laws. In years past for an official to justly apply punishments for violating a segregation law or a statute that restricts women's rights does not confer moral permissibility on acts of discrimination. Regardless of how effectively a community adhered to a segregation law, no moral authority was established for that law by virtue of some community's conformity with it. Another case which illustrates this point is that fervent opponents of abortion find no solace in laws which grant legal access to this procedure. The moral status of abortion, for them, remains unaffected by vacillating Supreme Court decisions. In some eyes the punishment of conscientious objectors in no way enhances this law's moral credibility.

So the fundamental problem with Robinson's argument is that the moral status of an act is not determined by the efficiency rates of apprehension and conviction. Efficiency rates attach to levels of social justice; percentages of specific conduct by individuals attaches to the level of moral or immoral behavior in that society.

Furthermore, in a forward-looking perspective, in order for a law to deter potential offenders they must believe there is a possibility they will be apprehended. Even if the law, in every instance, justly punishes all those apprehended, most offenders will still assume *they* will not be caught. This is precisely what Robinson's statistics show. Here Robinson's study would be benefit by precisely defining who a potential offender is.

Psychologically, potential offenders are those who are not constrained by personal morality to evaluate some immoral acts as unattractive. Some feature on an illegal and an immoral act tempts them. Robinson's reforms are merely intended to impress upon potential law breakers that the attractiveness of these base activities decreases as the efficiency rate of apprehension increases. But these are not the people for whom Aristotle's lectures are intended. Robinson's project is not to recommend virtue as desirable in and of itself. As Burnyeat interprets Aristotle, lectures on the intrinsic value of virtue will influence only those who have ahold of the moral facts and are motivated to more clearly understand why and how to be virtuous (1980).

> This is why Aristotle can claim...that the goal of the study of ethics is action, not merely knowledge: to become fully virtuous rather than simply to know what virtue requires. Someone with a sense of shame will respond, because he wants to do better at the right sorts of things. Someone with nothing but a fear of punishment will not respond; the only thing to do with him is tell him what he will get in trouble for (Burnyeat, 1980, p. 81).

Robinson suggested reforms to the justice system are intended to edify potential offenders to the fact that what they have been told about apprehension, conviction, and punishment is true. But, given these reforms, the best that he can hope for is an increase in the number of people to be

thinking at Kohlberg's law and order stage. All the improvements Robinson suggests are merely intended to transmit the message that the chances of apprehension, conviction, and punishment have greatly increased. In short, more people will actually be "in trouble". But this is not instruction regarding an act's moral permissibility; it is only a pronouncement on the efficiency of the justice system to punish that which it considers to be wrong. We still may not know, or care, why some act is wrong; we will avoid it because it is something we are relatively sure we will punished for doing.

Robinson hopes are directed towards enhancing the fear of punishment. But to instill a fear of punishment hardly seems a worthy aspiration for education, law, or a democratic society. Any society that strives to motivate her citizens with that logic may very well get what it deserves: a citizen body of "pre-moral" beings.

What is missing is an effort to harness the power of a sense of shame. A personal morality guided by a sense of shame will be unaffected by the current efficiency rates of punishment since acts for which one is legally and morally blameworthy will not seem attractive. Such a person is dissuaded by an immoral act's disgracefulness and the knowledge of the internal pain it will cause long before he calculates the odds of possible public apprehension. To conclude, Robinson's reforms might have a beneficial effect on reducing crime, but far more than this is needed to help young people develop good and strong characters.

Detention Survey

To investigate the deterrent potential of in-school detentions, the researcher conducted a survey of 574 students in seven elementary school

grades. Students were asked to answer questions pertaining to what they thought the purpose and the effectiveness of detentions and how they might or have reacted to receiving one (See Appendix C).

The summaries of the detention survey (Tables 3, 4, and 5) show that the perception of the effectiveness of detentions steadily decreases consistently from kindergarten to the sixth grade. Ninety-four percent of kindergartners believe detentions help to enforce school rules and curtail misbehavior. Only 21% of sixth-graders agree.

As children mature the frequency of split decisions increase. Although it was not an option on the survey sheet, many students wrote in that they believe detentions could be effective for some children but not for others. Whereas the percentage of detention's effectiveness steadily decreases with age, the percentage of split decision write-ins steadily increases. Representative comments of this view are: "I think it depends on the person. Some people may think nothing of it or some people really learn from it (5th grader). A frequent response expresses the opinion: "It would work for me but you see the same kids in there all the time" (6th grader). From the fourth grade on, many children make the observation that "the same kids" are in detention repeatedly.

As children mature, the nature of the responses to how one feels changes. At the kindergarten and the first grade level customary responses were "angry"', "sad", "mad", and "bad". Second through fourth grade were "guilty", "shouldn't have done it", "bad", "bad if I deserved it", and, "mad if I didn't do anything wrong". Only one third grader wrote, "I feel fine". A small percentage of fourth graders wrote, "It doesn't bother me at all".

From the fourth grade on, the researcher had the general impression that those children who had never served a detention were more inclined to

believe detentions were effective than were those children who had served them. As cited above, several comments were of the nature: "It would work for me, but...". From these same classes responses of "Not so good" occurred as frequently as "Not so bad". For others at 5th and 6th grade level detentions have become routine. One child wrote "it feels like a daily assignment".

In addition to the expected "It's only a fifteen minute recess" and "I don't care at all" type responses, at the 5th and 6th grade level, there were some answers that implied, or explicitly stated, more. One child wrote: "I like detentions because it's alot warmer in the winter and colder in the summer and it's quiet. I like that alot better." Three others wrote simply "It's quiet", and another said "It's fine. I can read or do homework. It's usually quiet and (that is) good". The appreciation of a period of quiet time seemed significant to the researcher (See Tables 3, 4, and 5).

One conclusion to be drawn from this survey is that detentions become less painful as they become more familiar. Conversely, if a child has never received one, the threat of a detention retains a deterrent quality. In the upper elementary grades, however, a majority of students believe that detentions do not have a deterrent property for the general population.

Table 3. Detention Survey by Class

Class	Yes	No	Yes and No
Kindergarten 1	12	2	0
Kindergarten 2	16	0	0
First 1	14	1	0
First 2	16	2	0
First 3	12	4	0
Second 1	17	3	0
Second 2	16	0	0
Second 3	13	5	2
Second 4	13	4	2
Second 5	13	3	3
Third 1	15	4	1
Third 2	13	7	0
Third 3	13	8	0
Third 4	11	1	6
Third 5	12	3	3
Fourth 1	8	4	4
Fourth 2	8	10	0
Fourth 3	12	5	0
Fourth 4	6	9	3
Fourth 5	12	8	0
Fourth 6	9	6	6
Fifth 1	6	12	5
Fifth 2	6	12	4
Fifth 3	7	13	4
Fifth 4	4	15	3
Fifth 5	6	7	4
Sixth 1	10	2	5
Sixth 2	2	6	14
Sixth 3	4	15	3
Sixth 4	2	12	1

Table 4. Detention Survey by Grade

Grade	Yes	No	Yes and No
Kindergarten	28	2	0
First	42	7	0
Second	72	15	7
Third	64	23	10
Fourth	55	42	13
Fifth	29	59	20
Sixth	18	35	33

Table 5. Detention Survey by Percentage

Grade	Yes	No	Yes and No
Kindergarten	94	6	0
First	86	14	0
Second	77	16	7
Third	66	24	10
Fourth	50	38	12
Fifth	26	55	19
Sixth	21	41	38

The most interesting responses were from those children who reported they liked or enjoyed detentions. Other than a few children who reported they disliked recess, it appears that a small but significant number of children reported an appreciation for moments of quiet. In order to meet the instructional daily teaching time required by the new curriculum frameworks, study halls in many elementary schools have been eliminated.

It is acknowledged that the threat of a detention is only one variable among many that influences a student's behavior.

In general, schools are active and vibrant communities, but they are also noisy places. If a child's home is fast paced and noisy, as many are, then quiet moments for reading and reflection will be few. In a letter to the editor regarding the cover story on homework, one teacher wrote in:

> The students in one of my classes beg for a 10-minute sit-silent period that I instituted in response to chronic overstimulation. Can you believe it? Middle-school students have a desire to sit silent? (Time, 15 February 1999).

A schedule that accommodates periods of quiet time to read and to reflect upon what one has read is one obvious suggestion for curriculum reform. If Aristotle was correct to assign contemplation a place above all other moral and intellectual virtues, those schools involved in the development of character now have a concrete goal at which to aim.

There is a resurgence of interest in character education and in the role a public school can play. Two established institutes - Thomas Lickona's "Center for the Fourth and Fifth R's" and Kevin Ryan's "International Center for Character Education" - offer school programs that have credible

suggestions for establishing and for reforming curricula to foster moral development. With a goal of the practical implementation of their comprehensive moral development theories, neither program has concentrated on an extended analysis of moral shame nor do they emphasize the role a sense of shame occupies in the development of character. This following section focuses on reforms that are specifically associated with a sense of shame.

An Answer to Research Question #3

Various public school initiatives have appealed to guilt and shame to change attitudes and behaviors. Bolstered by the knowledge acquired from their classroom teachers, their counselors, and in health classes, kindergartners regard smoking as harmful and foolish, first-graders can identify a "good touch" from a bad one, and from the second grade on most children come to believe littering is wrong, "extinct means forever", drug use is bad, and tolerance is a cardinal virtue. As a result, many young people today regard disgraceful conduct to be exemplified by polluting, smoking, the sexual abuse of minors, discrimination, and substance abuse. To be informed on these issues and to revise one's behavior accordingly undoubtably constitutes personal, social, and ecological advancements. But this is not to say a child is on his way to grasping the essential "moral facts". For example, tolerance can be an attitude, when directed at improper objects, that can undermine moral responsibility and obscure sound judgment. Teachers are under no obligation to tolerate dishonesty, disrespectfulness, unkindness, or irresponsibility. Similarly, students ought not develop a value scheme that dismisses acts of this nature lightly. And the inadvertent message that many

children receive from school health classes and from that which trickles down from some modern psychological theories is that physical well-being has supplanted moral goodness. The easy call is to identify and avoid that which makes one physically ill. Too often a preoccupation with "health" comes at the expense of recognizing an ethical dimension. Appraisals of something as morally right or wrong is avoided so as not to be faulted for an archaic judgmentalism, personal zealotry, or controversial "indoctrinative" impositions. Without question, physical health is a blessing and excellence in mathematics and communication skills are valuable commodities. But if these goods are attained at the expense of, or as importantly, without an accompanying moral knowledge, then some of our children may live long and possibly prosperous lives, but these lives could ultimately be unhappy ones. Commercially produced laminated posters that hang in many public schools read: "Zero tolerance for violence" or "Drug-free Zone"; no such posters are yet produced which read: "Zero tolerance for dishonesty".

Public schools share in the responsibility to introduce children to the basic moral facts. One suggestion that will help to introduce these facts is to establish a "Word of the Month" program. This practice is endorsed by some character educators; specific new suggestions can be offered, however, to connect this program with the development of a sense of shame.

Word lists can vary to include those core values a school community identifies as most appropriate. Below is the list the researcher proposed and oversees for the academic year 1998 - 1999 in the Orange Elementary School system.

September - Honesty
October - Responsibility
November - Consideration (Golden Rule)
December - Cooperation
January - Politeness / Courtesy
February - Respectfulness
March - Fairness / Justice
April - Friendship
May - Sportsmanship

It is suggested that each month every class - systemwide - attempts to define the word (or virtue), to offer examples as to how that virtue is exemplified, and to be attentive to examples from lessons and from literature when the virtue, or its contrary, emerges. Monthly newsletters alert families to the new topic and encourage discussions to be held at home. A systemwide adoption of the program affords the opportunity for siblings to concentrate on the same topic which will help coordinate these home discussions.

If schools approach parents at the beginning of the year with an invitation to discuss the list, and in the spirit of assisting them - as the primary caregivers - in helping to develop these qualities of character that they most assuredly want to see in their children, a healthy partnership can begin to develop. A simple contract to take the project seriously between all parties - parents, teachers, and children - can be signed. Now, much like the boy scout oath, to be a good member of the school community is defined as one who is honest, responsible, courteous, respectful, and so on. Nothing seems too controversial here; either parents want their children to be honest, kind, and courteous or they don't.

An additional value of a systemwide adoption of the program is that children can directly experience the increasing sophistication of their ability to offer defining characteristics and the range of cases in which these virtues

operate. It will be instructive in itself to learn that the topic is rich enough to revisit. And the adjudication of conflicting moral claims can be engaged so as to be age appropriate. There are many ways to approach such questions as: "Is one obligated to be brutally honest?" or "Is it honest to leave out the whole truth?" Hopefully, in the family discussions older siblings will tax the moral imagination of their younger brothers and sisters (or vice versa) with some thorny cases or new considerations. But, unlike Kohlberg's theory, this dimension is hardly all there is.

Violations of the qualities of character on the list can now be handled with a new clarity and assurance. These virtuous qualities, and others, have been agreed upon to contribute to good character. And good character ought to be portrayed as beneficial for the individual as well as for the community. No student need be publicly humiliated when falling short, but an honest engagement must take place. As the school's adults model these virtues, students have tangible examples of how better to approximate these qualities. By example a child can be shown, simply and concretely, a better way to behave. And if adults do behave accordingly, surveys of appraisal respect will more closely coincide with the results of the recognition respect poll.

A suggestion that accompanies the word list concerns how a teacher should respond to the reaction of a student who displays wrong behavior. If a student expresses shame for his behavior, the most appropriate reaction from a teacher might be to accept this expression of repentance, acknowledge the behavior as unacceptance, but also point out that it is commendable that the student honestly recognizes his transgression, has not lied to conceal the mistake, has reacted to it with the proper regret, and has displayed a genuine willingness to improve. The teacher can point out to the student that what he did was indeed wrong but, more importantly, for him to see it as such and to

assume responsibility for it signals the desire to improve. A brief discussion of better alternatives for future conduct can ensue.

The task for the teacher is far more complicated for the student who reacts shamelessly or with disinterest. In these instances the teacher will have to refer back to the list and its contraries and attempt to persuade the student to see certain qualities and dispositions as contributing to a happy life. How one does this will be dictated by the child's developmental stage.

When and if a parental objection arises, a respectful, philosophical dialogue can ensue. Administrators and teachers have no monopoly on insights into possible conflicting moral claims or the range of cases; but now they do have, with the contract and the list, standards to which all must adhere and specific guidelines which restrict the field of individual liberties that might disrupt the school community.

It would be an attractive selling point to propose that this program can be adopted with a minimum of added work for an already overburdened staff. It might be suggested the program is but another dimension that merely augments the work that is already being done. But, for the program to be effective, this is not the case. And here additional suggestions for curriculum reform emerge. One illustration is that examples from literature will spontaneously emerge. But the teacher must seize the opportunity and direct the class discussion appropriately. And the time to research the virtue, poll the students for examples, display the children's thoughts on a bulletin board, and synthesize these thoughts to arrive at age-appropriate and enlightening definitions all will take considerable time. As the year progresses interest may wane and other duties may seem more pressing. One school member, possibly the principal, a counselor, or the school psychologist, might be assigned to keep interest high.

Second, the most worrisome observation that repeatedly surfaced in this study's interviews is the concern that too many children appear to be morally unreflective. Remarkably a social worker suggests that this can be explained by the fact that young people do not have enough "time". Presumably, their priorities are otherwise arranged so that all their attention is in other ways preoccupied and consumed. It seems more plausible to suggest they have not had the opportunity to develop this admirable reflective quality. In our fast paced world it may be too easy to overlook the simple fact that thoughtfulness is hard work. To be thoughtful, one must have exposure to material upon which to reflect, the discipline for extended and undistracted mental operations, and the emotional control and will power to stay focused. But one must be able *to* focus. As mentioned, with vibrant communities comes high levels of noise. Administering intelligence tests in three different elementary schools the researcher takes pains to find the quietest place available so students can perform at their best. It is not easy. When asked about noise levels, few students seem bothered. Regardless, the researcher will oftentimes feel required to suspend a test session until a later time. He wonders if their reports of the apparent negligible effect of noise on their performance is a good thing. If children are becoming acclimated to high noise levels this suggests a topic worthy of further study. So another suggestion for reform is for administrators to set building-wide times for quiet reflection. If buildings can coordinate, at one and the same time, all classes to have mid-morning snacks or daily assemblies, so to can they arrange a short period of silence for reading and reflection. If moral reflection is an activity, like virtue, that requires practice, this seems a good place to begin.

Moral unreflectiveness attracted national attention with the Clinton - Lewinsky matter. This coincided with conducting research for this project; it is

introduced here reluctantly. If there are any hopeful signs for a country fatigued by this disgraceful performance, it is the reemergence of a public dialogue that utilizes so many terms of moral self-assessment. Hundreds of newspaper articles and numerous television commentators, along with the principal players themselves, have used the terms 'guilt', 'shame', 'shamelessness', 'regret', 'remorse', and 'repentance'. The drafted Senate censure characterized Clinton's behavior as exemplifying "shamelessness". The chronology of Clinton's public statements followed the graduated scale of regret, to guilt, to remorse, and finally to shame. Many commentators were distressed it proceeded so slowly; this public dissatisfaction unquestionably accelerated the progression of Clinton's emotional responses. Others questioned the sincerity - and we have yet to hear - of Clinton's "repentance". Still others, Lewinsky among them, remark that this appears to be a case study in the difference between a fear of punishment and a fear of disgrace. Lewinsky reportedly believes Clinton is only sorry to have been caught (Jurkowitz, 1999a).

In this unfortunate incident one benefit is the refocusing of national attention on these emotions of self-assessment. For a time it was a daily occurrence for newspaper articles to refer to shame. This was a word one saw only infrequently from the press during the 70s and 80s - a time often characterized as eras of self-preoccupation and materialism. A recent article by syndicated columnist Donald Kaul, "Without Shame" is an example. He wrote this as a clever opening paragraph.

> I watched Monica Lewinsky's interview with Barbara Walters last week and...I was appalled. I found the woman altogether insufferable: vulgar, obnoxious, and utterly without shame. I didn't like Monica much either (Recorder, 15 March 1999).

With both Clinton and Lewinsky, the public was exposed to clear instances, as Aristotle has said, of affective miscalculations and youthful desire overcoming reason. This exchange transpired in the television interview Kaul refers to between Walters and Lewinsky.

> BW: Did you ever say to yourself, "I'm doing something wrong...This is bad for the country. Did you ever think about that?
>
> ML: Now with everything that's happened...I feel bad I didn't. But I didn't at that time. I was enamored with him. And I was excited. And I was enjoying myself (Jurkowitz, The Boston Globe, 4 March 1999)

Later in the interview, Lewinsky's moral unreflectiveness and fuzzy thinking is again exposed.

> BW: If you had it to do over again, would you have the relationship with Bill Clinton?
>
> ML: There are some days that I regret that the relationship ever started, and there are some days that *I just regret* that I ever confided in Linda Tripp (Jurowitz, 1999a, italics added).

White House correspondent Sam Donaldson reacted to the interview with: "Here is a young woman who clearly doesn't feel any personal *shame*, doesn't think she did anything wrong...she doesn't get it (Jurkowitz, Globe, 11 March 1999, italics added). With more than a year to reflect upon the situation, it is perplexing Lewinsky "doesn't get it". From the study's interviews this same unreflectiveness appears to hold true for the high school car-thief and the young woman on academic probation. As was proposed at the outset, a developed sense of shame could have avoided these problems.

The costly and ugly national disgrace we have all endured gives us some perspective to shame's potential value.

Moral reflectiveness will increase a child's control of his or her actions with a new understanding of one's motivations. The aspiration to lead a good life and to avoid disgrace requires clear thought, proper affective responses, control of the emotions, and a desire for the just and noble. Acknowledging instances of moral shame points to future avenues of preferable behavior. A sense of shame designates these parameters.

Third, if Kupperman is correct to propose young students will benefit from dogmatic instruction, that instruction ought to be consistent within a school system. Investigating rationalizations from different perspectives and resolving ethical dilemmas might be appropriate at the high school level, but not in the early elementary grades. In specific subjects - mathematics for example - there has to be a curriculum of logical progressions from year to year. So too with moral development. This requires that, in establishing moral development strategies, the coordination of efforts will have different focuses. Elementary school programs will need strong, continued guidance in imparting the basic moral facts coherently and consistently. Just as algebra ought not precede the learning of the multiplication tables, having students debate dilemmas ought not precede the cognitive and emotional attachment to the virtues. We must first believe stealing and dishonesty are wrong before we can calculate how extreme the circumstances must be in order to override our moral inclinations and responsibilities. There will be no dilemma in the first place if our sense of shame does not inform us that stealing and dishonest acts will cause us internal pain. In large part, it is precisely this sense of shame that creates the conflict. It is, then, logically required that the sense of shame precede the project of adjudicating conflicting moral claims. The upper grades

will have more flexibility in discussing the particular circumstances and applications of the virtues. But teachers at the elementary level are just as much individuals as are those in the upper grades. So creativity and individual input in relaying the moral facts is especially important in the early grades to keep interest high.

Fourth, counseling is an area in need of reform. It is vitally important what transpires systemwide be supported in individual efforts. Confidentiality is an umbrella that extends over so wide an area that many times little is known about what transpires in private counseling sessions. At team meetings on a student's individual education plan (IEPs) or in special education meetings (SPED evaluations and reevaluations) counselors often report only that they see a child for "outside issues" or for "personal problems". Nothing is shared about a counselor's objectives for a child, specific counseling successes or failures, or future plans. Parents, teachers, and administrators must operate blindly in good faith.

If moral development programs are an essential part of the school experience, counselors are, by design, apt to encounter many instances of violations of school rules which have ethical dimensions. Many students are referred to counseling precisely because of just such a history of violations. But one can earn counseling certification without any exposure to ethics, ethical theories, logic, or educational philosophy.

Fifth, it is suggested that this change at the university level. Counselors trained in Rogerian-type methods are still being instructed never to use the terms "should" or "shouldn't". This, it was explained to this researcher during his course work, stifles dialogue and personal discovery. Then and now, this seems preposterous. The teachers of teachers should encourage their

students to take moral progress seriously. Anything less constitutes an irresponsible omission.

In interviews for this document, the researcher noted many wall posters that hang in counselor's offices. Many have pithy, but rather confused, messages. A popular one reads: "All emotions are O.K.; it's what you do with them that counts". Presumably, envy is alright if it remains bottled up, malice can be exemplified in an acceptable manner, and there is some proper measure of shamelessness. One counselor remarked, "Shame is not a word in my vocabulary". So for her shamelessness must not exist in any measure. It is understandable how some children can get confused. Counselors and teachers encounter difficult cases every day. Counseling and teaching certification that requires three credits in the study of the emotions, of logic, or in ethical theories could strengthen the critical thinking skills so as to deal more effectively with these important and difficult cases.

Chapter Summary

Many public school children and adults who work with public school children offered their insights through surveys and personal interviews on a variety of topics related to the emotion of moral shame. On being approached for an interview all of the adults who participated reported, in varying degrees, to an initial uneasiness to discuss shame; none felt qualified and no one was perfectly comfortable with the topic. The researcher was denied permission to speak with students in one school and with inmates in a correctional facility. A few requests by telephone were never returned. Of those who agreed to participate, however, while reviewing their interview guides prior to our meeting or in the interview itself, all of the participants became animated and

engaged. With slight encouragement, and almost as if they were recovering a suppressed memory, they seemed to realize that they had much to say about moral shame and its role in child and character development.

All the participants recognize an enormous variety and amount of stress on the family. It is commonly thought by all participants that the biological parents in approximately half of the families with school age children are divorced. A significant percentage of the families that the participants are involved with are thought to desperately need - or would benefit by - parenting skills education. A consensus is many parents either do not model appropriate behavior or have a compromised ability to educate their children in matters of character development. One reason for a compromised ability to parent is that many households have both caregivers working full-time. Simply put, at the end of the day the parents or guardians are understandably tired. And in many households, because of after school jobs, so are the children.

More and more students are reported to be working after school. As a result, these students appear tired during school. Many schools report increasing numbers of students do not regularly or conscientiously do their homework and the connection with outside employment is obvious.

Some students have assumed an administrative role of dictating homework policy to which some teachers and administers have acquiesced. Students in the upper grades show outright disdain for authority, while younger students are occasionally characterized as ignorant of the common courtesy of showing deference to their elders. By acquiescing in matters of homework policy and in enforcing discipline, one high school teacher recognizes adults have abdicated their authoritative responsibility.

Another troubling trend reported by elementary school teachers is the impression that children appear to be unversed in basic manners while high

school teachers are distressed by the levels of vulgar language and disrespectfulness. Across all grade levels, most troubling to some educators is the tendency of parents to intercede on their child's behalf with excuses for misbehavior. Offering extenuating circumstances to absolve a child of his or her responsibility is becoming commonplace. This parental intercession creates an adversarial relationship with the teacher. When teachers appeal to administrators to resolve the conflict, a common perception is that too often the principals and superintendent will attempt to appease the parents at the teacher's expense.

The general picture seems to be one of younger children who have not been exposed to - and, therefore, do not have ahold of - either the basic "moral facts" or the conventional rules of etiquette. Older students are thought to be preoccupied with survival and/or material goods. Teachers are reluctant and discouraged by past efforts to impart these lessons due to parental charges of inappropriate intervention as well as non-support from their administrators. The long term effect of all these factors on maintaining discipline, academic standards, and the work ethic is profoundly negative.

Compounding these problems, as one high school educator related, is the perception that a liberal education is becoming too dependent upon producing demonstrable relevance to job readiness skills. He worries further that too many of his students are demanding a justification for how their efforts and educational pursuits will translate into "billable" skills. He is saddened to see - and cites as evidence for this trend - that art and music appreciation courses have been replaced by Accounting I, II, and III (see Appendix F). Mathematics and "communication skills" seems to constitute the primary educational objectives for one principal.

Of particular relevance to this study is the troubling and complex observation that many children and adolescents appear to be morally unreflective, if not shameless. Several candidates - and candidates in conjunction with one another - emerged to explain this phenomenon.

First, a shared opinion was that respect for authority has significantly eroded. Although a recognition respect survey for authority figures registered optimistic findings, this did not coincide with the experience of the participants.

Second, as children mature they seem less susceptible to a fear of punishment from schools (e.g., the detention survey) and from legal institutions (e.g. the apparent nonchalance of defendants in area court houses).

Third, a rabbi, a priest, and a state trooper reported that communities no longer wield a controlling power over her citizens. The state trooper observed that many communities no longer have the means nor the desire to hold some of her members accountable for harmful or immoral behavior. This behavior is tolerable, the message seems to be, if it is confined to the fringes. But it may be true that as a community retreats from insisting upon and imposing acceptable standards of behavior of all citizens, the community itself begins to dissolve or fracture. As the social worker observes, many young people have formed their own social groups. And to only these groups do they feel answerable. Here it is not a question of a community dissolving; young people have never joined. In turn, one will not fear ostracism from that to which one has never been connected.

Fourth, having never connected with a community may account, in part, for a morally unreflective disposition and the emergence of the adoption of the episodic life view. As the rabbi observed, not long ago the perception of Jewish citizens was that the way to assimilate into American society was to

be "good". Shameful, undesirable, or unfortunate family circumstances were kept hidden. But if communities are slowly becoming smaller associations defined by subjectively chosen norms, the shameful can become, for some, acceptable. Recall the comments of the social service supervisor who implied that for some young people dangerously high levels of destructive behavior is the price of admission into their group. Street gangs share similar requirements.

This returns us full-circle to the episodic life view. Some participants reported they fear children see life as a series of discrete and disjointed episodes that are independently negotiated by whatever means necessary to maximize extrinsic goods. If, for example, that extrinsic good is a diploma, a grade of D will suffice. Two high school students reported that for them - and everyone they know - there is no compunction to cheat to acquire the D. A conception of virtue does not portray cheating as unattractive because virtue does not unify activities, projects, commitments, or goals. Good character will not be conceived as unified over time if life is a series of disjointed "scenes".

As a school counselor charges, the media shares responsibility for this phenomena. The visual media is riddled with daily images of glorified violence seemingly disconnected from emotional impact and lasting influence, split-second flashing images that require no expenditure of sustained attention, and casual sexual encounters that require no commitment or sacrifice. One cannot look to television or the movies to find an alternative to the episodic life view exemplified and recommended.

Reforming the justice system so as to legitimize a fear of punishment will not reorient anyone to desire virtue for its own sake. An external threat might inhibit activity; it cannot, by itself, motivate an internal conversion. These findings are summarized in Chapter 6.

CHAPTER 6

SUMMARY OF THE STUDY AND RECOMMENDATIONS

Introduction

At the end of the twentieth century, public schools, as never before, are expected to care for a wide array of children's varied developmental needs. Many public schools feel obligated to provide children with, among other things, a healthy breakfast, after school tutoring and recreation, emotional and behavioral interventions, and instruction in good hygiene, sexually transmitted diseases, safety issues, and the dangers of substance abuse.

There is also a resurgence of interest in the public school's role in a child's moral education and character development. Simultaneously there is a concern in this country that the severity of school age children's misbehavior is on the rise. In 1999 reports of heavily armed students firing on and killing their classmates and teachers have become tragically commonplace.

One problem that this study addresses is the parallel development of an increase in an apparent shamelessness for social misbehavior and criminal deeds (Kahan, 1997; Jurowitz, 1999; Kaul, 1999). Many self-reports from the school-aged population include testimonials that some students feel no shame or remorse for their misbehavior (Jurowitz, 1999). One hypothesis of this study is that if a child had acquired a sense of shame, some of these criminal acts might never had occurred.

A second problem addressed by this study is that it is not at all clear as to what the emotions of shame and shamelessness are. Initially, Aristotle's

comments on shame seem contradictory while some modern commentaries are even more obtuse. At a fundamental level, a review of the pertinent literature suggests there is substantial disagreement as to how one defines "emotion". On another level there is an even greater disagreement over what moral significance ought to be ascribed to the emotions. And moral shame is an emotion that is particularly plagued by this imprecision and these disagreements. By way of illustration, there is no consensus in the literature on the moral significance of shame. Some authors claim shame has no moral significance, it is intrinsically bad (Isenberg, 1980). Others believe shame to be neutral (Urmson, 1980). Some writers believe shame to have positive attributes outweighed by its negative qualities (Kekes, 1990, 1993), while still others believe shame to be a positive emotion (Taylor, 1985; Williams, 1993).

If moral shame can be shown to be conditionally good, a third problem arises: Do public school moral education programs recognize and utilize shame's beneficial qualities?

Summary of the Study

This is an exploratory, conceptual study with three aims. These aims are outlined in Chapter 1. There it is detailed that the study will, first, attempt to offer a clear, precise, and useful definition of moral shame. Second, if moral shame can be persuasively argued to be conditionally good, can it be shown to affect character development positively? Third, from the conclusions of the preceding aims, do suggestions emerge for the reform of public school moral education curricula. These aims guide the formulation of the three research questions. These are: 1) "What is the emotion of moral shame?", 2) "What impact might moral shame have on character development?", and 3) "What

implications for the reform of school curriculum are suggested by the findings of this study?".

Chapter 2 details the research design and procedure. Since this is a conceptual study the literature review is extensive. This review spans ancient philosophical texts to modern educational articles.

In depth interviewing, as a quantitative method, is employed to produce descriptive data from twenty-four professional men and women who, in various capacities, serve children. Two surveys are conducted with 576 school children. One survey asked children about their perceptions and reactions to in-school detentions. As only one variable among many which affect behavior, detentions are of interest because the researcher gained some insight into a child's emotional reaction to misbehavior. These data intended to elicit information regarding one effect shame might have on character development.

The second survey asked children to rank occupations according to the child's level of respect for fifteen different professions. The rationale for collecting these data is that one can assume that if a child has respect for a profession, then he or she will likely have some respect for the principles, laws, or standards of that profession. Ranking a profession highly gives some initial insight into a child's respect for these principles.

With the aim of arriving at a suitable answer to Research Question #1, "What is the emotion of moral shame?", Chapter 3 proceeds in three specific steps. First, an emotion is claimed to be comprised of the interrelated components of cognition, affect, and desire. Arguments are advanced to discredit the positions that claim emotions are solely cognition or affect. In the second section, having established the necessary and sufficient conditions an emotion must meet, several self-regarding emotions related to shame are analyzed. In order, these are: regret, remorse, repentance, guilt,

embarrassment, humiliation, self-esteem, pride, and self-respect. Following a review of the literature on these emotions, specific definitions for each are formulated.

An analysis of these emotions enables the researcher, in the third section of Chapter 3, to embark on a study of those qualities that are distinctive of shame. To be clear about what an emotion is seems to logically precede any attempt to attribute significance to that emotion. Accordingly, the analysis of moral shame next reviews various positions in the literature that concentrate on specific features of this emotion. These include arguments that shame is either an internal or an external experience, whether an audience is required in order to feel shame, whether all shame experiences are moral in nature, and, finally, a review of positions that question shame's moral significance. Arguments are advanced which propose shame can be experienced internally and externally, an audience is not required, not all shame experiences need be moral in nature, and that shame is highly significant for moral progress. Having advanced an argument for each of these points, a formal definition of moral shame is advanced.

Chapter 4 reviews past and present theories of moral development and moral education programs. The purpose of this review is twofold. The review attempts, first, to determine if these theories and programs are cognizant of shame's beneficial qualities and, second, to ascertain whether the insights gained from the analysis of moral shame suggests revisions that will strengthen existing public school moral education theories and programs.

The theories and programs reviewed are an early American indoctrinative model, three theories of the leading cognitive-developmentalists Jean Piaget, Sidney Simon, and Lawrence Kohlberg, a contemporary character education program, and an Aristotelian theory of moral

development. Each section concludes with how shame is accommodated within each theory or program.

A synopsis of this review is as follows. The early indoctrinative model has much to recommend it, but it is faulted for being inflexible to personal circumstance and unnecessarily restricted to the operative social customs. Such confinement can relegate moral shame to violations of social customs exclusively.

Both Piaget's and Kohlberg's theories of moral development could have been improved by a greater emphasis on the emotional aspect of the human condition. Piaget's theories of moral development and shame are faulted for an unpersuasive reliance on "realism". It is argued Kohlberg's stage theory is defective by virtue of a "pre-moral" conventionalism that infects all stages up until the fifth level. Through Stage 4, with its emphasis on appearances and abiding by social conventions, Kohlberg's theory is insensitive to moral shame.

Simon's Value Clarification Theory is discredited for many reasons. Among these are its permissive requirements for a "value", its ethical relativism, its emasculation of teacher authority by prescribing nonjudgmental adult intervention, and a theoretical incoherence. Moral shame has no discernible role in such a relativistic value program.

The modern character education theory is defended as preferable to all the previous theories and programs reviewed but it is faulted for its near total neglect of some of the self-regarding emotions, most notably, moral shame.

Chapter 4 concludes with an explication of a moral development theory which is Aristotelian in nature. This theory proposes moral development occurs in three developmental stages. In the first stage children learn the basic moral facts. Dogmatic instruction is appropriate with this age group. Shame occurs in instances of clear violations of central moral norms. In the

second stage, children begin to develop habits of good conduct. In doing so, good conduct becomes second nature. As conduct becomes habitual, those rules and principles that have been dogmatically instilled can now be examined in greater detail. Moral complexities can be studied and multiple perspectives can be debated. Shame now pains an agent internally because children at this stage begin to see how their behavior contributes to the development of a settled disposition. In the third stage of moral development an agent works out for herself how the virtues are appropriately exemplified given her particular circumstance. Her reason coincides with her desire and moral conduct appears to her as pleasurable. Virtue is seen as intrinsically desirable. Shame is the pain of disgrace for falling short of what virtue requires and of failing to approximate her "better self". A conditionally good status is attributed to moral shame by virtue of its power to reorient an agent to more desirable alternatives. The reaction to moral failures at the three developmental stages serves as an answer to Research Question #2.

Chapter 5, through interviews and surveys, reports on data that are collected regarding the participant's views on several different issues that relate to shame, character development, and the public school experience. These are: the family, children's view of the importance and purpose of education, the state of current student behavior, perceptions on children's level of respect for authority figures, how children respond to legal and moral wrongdoing, and what motivates good and bad behavior. Lastly, surveys on how children emotionally respond to school detentions and their level of respect for a variety of professions were conducted.

Regarding the family the majority of people interviewed believed there to be too many families with poor parental modeling, after school jobs negatively impacting on education, and an alarming increase in the number of parents

offering excuses for their child's misbehavior in school. The most distressing observation of the participants was an increase in adults attempting to deflect attention away from their child taking responsibility for his or her behavior.

Interviewing adults about their impression of how children regard an education, many participants noted an indifference in many children. This impression is supported by a trend of more and more students who are not doing homework, are satisfied with barely passing grades, and are disrespectful toward educators. Out of frustration, some teachers have stopped giving homework assignments, have abdicated their disciplinary authority,and do not oppose an emphasis on job readiness skills. For example, one veteran teacher remarked that his high school today more closely resembles a vocational school than a institution dedicated to a child's intellectual, aesthetic, and moral development.

When the interview shifted to how adults perceive current student behavior, common observations were that many students lack basic manners, show no deference to adults, and many students are openly hostile to people in authority. For the first time the theme of student's apparent moral unreflectiveness surfaced.

The respect for professions survey had surprising results. Students were asked to rank fifteen professions according to the level of respect that they had for these occupations. From the results five professions that can be construed as authority figures (Mother, Teacher, Priest, Police Officer, Judge) were extracted and ranked. Across grades from second to twelfth these professions scored generally high. This suggests that school children have high recognition respect for positions of authority. Appraisal respect for particular individuals within these professions may not score as well, which may, in part,

explain the disparity between why adults believe children's level of respect for authority to be low and the alarming juvenile criminal rates.

Moral unreflectiveness reappeared when the researcher questioned the participants about their views of how children respond to ethical and legal wrongdoing. Many children are thought to be unrepentant for wrongdoing, unintimidated by school punishments and legal ramifications, and are skeptical that the justice system is capable of exacting just punishments in the majority of cases. Reforms to improve the reliability of the justice system to exact just punishment may dissuade some, but it was also noted by the participants and the researcher that a fear of punishment is not the proper motivation to act virtuously.

Even the motivation to do good so as to avoid ostracism from society seems to have lost much of its force in contemporary society. Many participants appear to believe a large percentage of children have never connected to an adult social group. A young man will not, then, fear ostracism from that to which he is not attracted or to which he has never connected. Many of these participants further believe that a community's ability to restrain undesirable behavior has become negligible.

The detention survey also had surprising results. From kindergarten to the sixth grade there is a constant and alarming drop in student's beliefs that detentions are an effective means to control and shape behavior. While 94% of kindergartners believed detentions to be effective, only 21% continued to believe so by sixth grade. Many other variables contribute to how one behaves, but the detention survey seems significant since this is one of the few remaining ways a school can exert influence on student behavior.

The study concludes with several recommendations for curriculum reform which serves as an answer to Research Question #3. Among the

recommendations suggested are the institution of a Word of the Month program. In the early elementary grades this program serves to introduce children to basic moral principles. In the later grades it provides an excellent forum to discuss the exemplification of the virtues and the particular personal circumstances and moral conflicts that makes ethical matters so perplexing. This program is recommended also for the opportunity it allows for parents, teachers, and students to work in concert to establish a positive learning community.

Other advantages to the Word of the Month program are that it can help reestablish adult authority. Principles outlined in the program should extend to all facets of school life. Children who violate the values or virtues covered in the program can be confronted. But teachers need training in how best to handle reactions of shame and shamelessness. Current teacher and counselor certification programs presently offer no instruction in this area.

This suggests a final recommendation that university teacher and counselor certification programs add required course work in both the study of the emotions and in how to address student's reactions to their behavior. A student who expresses shame for her bad conduct has made a positive step toward reform. Here the opportunity presents itself for a teacher to acknowledge the transgression, offer a better alternative, and to commend the student for taking responsibility for her actions as well as for displaying the proper emotional reaction.

Recommendations for Further Study

Important issues illuminated by this study include the perception of many participants that a disturbingly large percentage of school children appear to be morally unreflective, that they do not exhibit shame for transgressions, that they are disrespectful of authority, and that they do not hold either education or the law in high regard.

Most the participants in this study are from New England and are of similar economic standing. All the school children interviewed and surveyed are from one school district. The current study could be improved with a wider sample of people of different races, socio-economic standings, geographical areas, and educational institutions. It is possible that the explanation for shamelessness could be quite different among the advantaged and the disadvantaged. For instance, this study did not conduct research among populations who - because of their immense good fortune - may consider themselves above the law, nor does it examine the views of those who - because of their profound misfortune - may feel marginalized or hopeless. Feelings of shame might operate quite differently in these two extreme circumstances. Future studies could augment the ideas presented here by conducting this more diversified research.

A key element in the moral development of children requires a partnership between parents and the school personnel. The current study would have benefited by a larger sample of parents. Many of the teachers who were surveyed are parents, but they spoke primarily as educators. The

perspective of moral education in the schools from the parents viewpoint would be valuable data for future studies.

One recommendation for curriculum reform is at the university level. It is suggested that teachers and counselors need instruction to properly confront instances of shame and shamelessness. One way this study can be instructive is in teaching educators what these emotions are, but more research needs to be done in the exact nature of the necessary reform of university certification programs and in the implementation of the new required course work.

It is a valuable learning opportunity to engage the child who feels ashamed. As with the study of moral shame, too often this condition for learning has been neglected.

APPENDIX A

VOLUNTARY CONSENT FORM

Dissertation Title: An Analysis of Moral Shame

Consent for Voluntary Participation

I volunteer to participate in this study and understand that:

1. I will be interviewed by Jay J. Conway, a doctoral candidate at the University of Massachusetts at Amherst, using an open-ended questioning interview format.

2. The questions I will respond to will address my views on the significance of self-regarding emotions. I understand that the interview will have a particular emphasis on moral shame.

3. The interview will be tape recorded to facilitate analysis of the data.

4. My name will not be used nor will I be identified by name in any way or at any time. I understand that I will be identified by a pseudonym and my actual profession (e.g. priest, rabbi, social worker, high school teacher, etc.). No geographical designation or place of employment will be used.

5. I may withdraw from part or all of this study at any time.

6. I have the right to review material prior to the final oral examination or other publication as well as the right to request a copy of the taped interview and a copy of the transcript in order to review the accuracy of the transcription.

7. I understand that all children must review this consent form with their legal guardian and that the guardian's signature is required to participate in this study.

8. I understand that the information from this interview will be included in Jay J. Conway's doctoral dissertation and may also be included in manuscripts submitted to professional journals for publication.

9. I am free to participate or to not participate without prejudice.

10. Because of the small number of participants, approximately forty people, I understand there is some risk that I may be identified as a participant in this study.

_____	_____
Participant's signature	Date
_____	_____
Guardian's signature	Date
_____	_____
Researcher's signature	Date

APPENDIX B

GENERAL INTERVIEW GUIDE

1. Briefly outline the work that you do.
    a. How long have you been doing this work?
    b. What attracted you to this profession?
    c. What is the age of the children that you serve?

2. During your professional career, what changes have occurred with or in:
    a. families
    b. peer influences
    c. the media and media influences
    d. the level of stressors on children
    e. children's view of authority figures
    f. children's view of education
    g. children's behavior

3. How do you think the children of today view legal and ethical transgressions?

4. What do you believe is a stronger motivational force for children: external restraints (e.g., the fear of punishment, fear of social disgrace or ostracism from the community) or internal restraints (e.g. personal morality)?

APPENDIX C

DETENTION SURVEY FORM

Detentions

Please take a moment to answer these questions thoughtfully and honestly. Thank you.

---

1. What do you think is the purpose of a detention? Or, What do schools hope to accomplish by giving someone a detention?

2. Do you think detentions are effective (do you think they "work")?

   Yes_____ No_____
   Please explain.

3. How would you feel if you got a detention? (Or how have you felt when you got one?)

Teacher and Grade _____

APPENDIX D

SURVEY INSTRUCTION FORM
FOR HIGH SCHOOL PARTICIPANTS

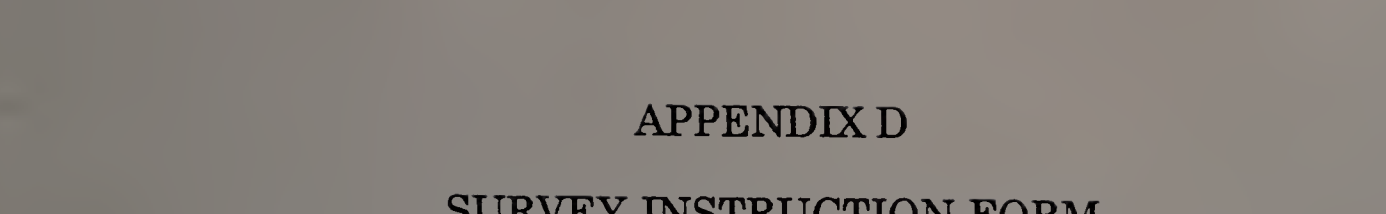
SURVEY INSTRUCTIONS

* Do NOT place your name anywhere on the survey form.
* In the survey, you are being asked to indicate your level of respect toward several professional fields. As you consider your thoughts, it is important that you focus your thinking **on the profession itself** and NOT on a specific individual or individuals in that profession.

For example, in the first category, which is "A Professional Athlete", you may think highly or lowly of Michael Jordan or Rebecca Lobo, but it doesn't matter for this survey. The concern here is with the profession itself and NOT with particular members of it.

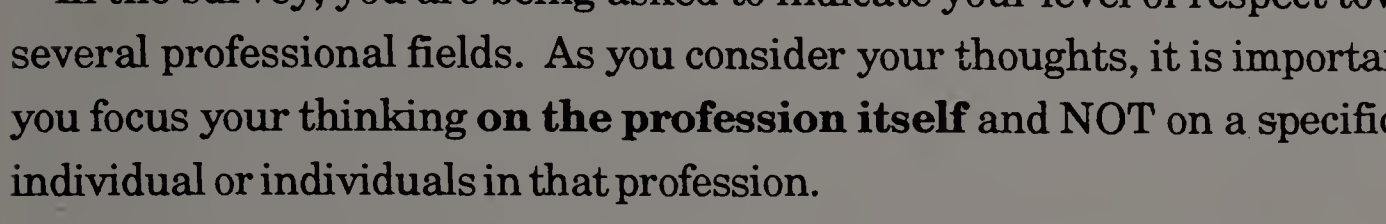
* For each category, place a *circle* around line 1, or line 2, or line 3, or line 4, or line 5 - whichever number BEST represents your feelings of respect toward that profession.

So,



means that you have a high level of respect for full-time mothers, but not the highest level.

And if you were to enter,



you would be saying that the profession of full-time mothering gets less than average respect from you. Thank you for your cooperation.

APPENDIX E

LEVEL OF RESPECT FOR PROFESSIONS SURVEY FORM

	1	2	3	4	5
Professional Athlete					
Movie Actor/Actress					
Politician					
Veterinarian					
Rock Musician					
Priest					
Television Actor/Actress					
School Teacher					
Doctor					
Judge					
Stock Broker					
Police Officer					
Car Salesman					
Lawyer					
Full-Time Mother					

1 = little or no respect

5 = respect very highly

APPENDIX F

INTERVIEW TRANSCRIPTION

Interviewer: To begin, would you tell me how long you have been a teacher and what grades you teach?

HSET: For about 33 years this is my first job and it will be my last job. I teach English. In 1980, I started my position as chairman of the department. I have been around 9th, 10th, 11th, and 12th graders. I do not confine myself to one grade nor do I confine myself to a level ability of learning, that is, I don't just teach honor students, I teach all students and have taught all students through my 33 years.

Interviewer: During these 33 years, what changes have you seen occur within the family?

HSET: Clearly that's the one on the top of everybody's list - the breakdown of the family. That families are generally speaking, at my level at least and probably even at earlier levels, as I am hearing, turning their kids over to the kind of culture I believe which finds its basis in sort of establishing its own authority, or finds its basis in absence of authority. My own sense is that the absence of authority for many children today - probably more than what we would like to know about - it really begins at birth. That could be probably be verified through some research. This kind of culture also strikes me of not only one which defines its own authority, but also one which is premised upon this kind of cool indifference. Cool in the sense of a jazzy term. The more indifferent one is - maybe with a little tinge of anger in it - that's my sense anyway.

Anger seems to be a little bit of maybe a big part of it for all I know of that kind of culture. I mean if you just take a look at some of the personnel that make up the kind of culture on the popular level, the people who you would point to and say he/she is a member of this kind of culture. You almost

never see a smile from these people, they seem to be so unhappy. You look on a record album, or whatever it might be, and there is this frown that seems to characterize a little bit of that. It is very difficult. I think it is an arrogance, and I am not sure what adjective I ought to precede with arrogance, but there seems to be an arrogance that has made up this kind of culture. And I think this kind of culture is not something that was invited. I think it evolved over many many decades and I certainly think all teenagers have been part of this kind of culture since the beginning of time. This particular kind of culture seems to have more force I think than the ones I've known or participated in.

Interviewer: Do you think that the children are emulating this anger that they see in the leaders or do you think that they have anger themselves?

HSET: I think that it is really a combination of both. I think for the kids who would be a part of this kind of culture is just because they want to belong. I think that it is adopted. I think for some kids who need this kind of culture, and who need it in a pretty serious way, I think a lot of anger has built up, genuine anger that has built up in them . And it just finds its place in this kind of culture itself. I bet we have something there with that anger - an arrogance. But this kind of culture, my sense again, seems to put a certain amount of weight on the adult world for this unhappiness that there is in the world, if not in our own personal lives. Relatively speaking that is to let's say pre 40's and speaking probably specifically the sexual revolution that took place between the 50's and 60's and thereafter. I think that the thing that annoys me the most about this though, is that this kind of culture is like an "I - I" thing as opposed to an "I - thou". I mean that in the sense that Martin Buber spoke of the "I - thou" , I don't think they seem to understand an "I - thou" kind of relationship that is at the center of all existence. I think you know. It's like "I - I". And it's not as if it is intentional, but it's like they don't know anything. They don't understand that there is a world beyond their own.

Interviewer: How's that?

HSET: I don't know if I got that right, but I thought about that. I have to say this, Jay, that the sexual revolution is a very very big part of your inquiry here into the question of shame. The ultimate form of shame had at one time to do with sexuality, as you well know. It started way back in prehistoric times. You know with issues dealing with incest for example, which was the ultimate taboo. But I remember in the 50's when I grew up, there was still something to virginity that still a sense of the value of virginity for example. Today as everybody in the world can tell you, anybody who knows some of this stuff, it seems to be reversed. What I am finding in the kids today is that there is general willingness to, it isn't even a sacrifice, they don't see it as a sacrifice - their virginity, they just see it as you know the natural course of events. I don't even think they ask a lot of intellectual questions, like why shouldn't I give up my virginity or whatever.

Interviewer: No?

HSET: No. I just think it is part of the flow the way the world is today. I'll give you an example in my own life. I brought up, well, I have three girls, but the two girls that are out of the house now we brought up as Catholics. They would go to communion every Sunday, they went through all the various whatever, the lessons and sacraments and all that other stuff that goes on in the church. They were a big part of that world and as soon as they graduated from high school, they both left the church, they cohabitated, and so on and so forth. I didn't really understand it. Cohabitation to me was just the wrong thing to do until I realized that "No", the culture has moved it into an acceptable thing to do now. It seems to be acceptable. I know this is true of some very dear friends of mine whose names I can't mention, but who brought their children up Catholic and were astounded when their children left high school and started cohabitating with their mates, or whatever, their partners. So I think when we talk about shame I don't know where the beginning or the end of this whole thing is, but I think that the sexual revolution had a whole lot to do with that motion of what's there to feel bad about. You know if I can more or less deal with the shame that comes from the sexual mores, or the absence of shame really, then nothing else seems to come up and measure up

to that. So therefore, everything else underneath the sexual revolution is acceptable. It almost seems, see if you agree with this, it almost seems as if we adhere to the old standards of like waiting until marriage, *we* have something to be ashamed of.

I can see that in my 17 year old daughter right now. I was telling my wife just last night that some place along the way, you know, in her life, just like the fact that she has some very pure and very pristine values right now. They are almost archaic, in some ways by today's standards. They are just beautiful. They are so healthy. They are so positive and so respectful of her own humanity and in humanity in general. I told my wife that I just have this awful sense that once she leaves high school and gets out there in that world that the forces out there are so powerful that even the very best kids in the world in my estimation are almost compelled (to conform to the popular culture). It's a scary thought. Especially when it is your own child.

Interviewer: Do you see any other forces affecting children and families that seem different today?

HSET: I think another thing is the whole philosophical dilemma we are in today, which is, you know, is at a very high level, but I think it does filter into their (the students) minds (is) the question of "What's the purpose? What's the meaning?, Why am I doing what I am doing?" I mean if the answer is only to get ahead - to be successful with money and so on. They don't see any other kinds of purposes, any higher purpose, and we as a society haven't given them much to search for either.

We have such very bad models out there, as you well know, in the world. Some of the people that are supposed to be adults are behaving like infants, in terms of their creed, in terms of the kind of standard setting. I don't want to sound like Bob Dole here or like the conservative party, which I don't identify with in the slightest, but there are adults who are putting out films and other types of entertainment. There are adults who are compromising the truth for their own good, intelligent beings who are compromising the truth, and various truths, for their own welfare. And I think the kids sense that. I think that right now in America we are a little bit weird. We are little bit out of it - very

confused about what it is we want as a nation, as a country. And I think that the adults are responsible. You see this is the thing. We talk about kids here and I think the biggest issue is adults. Where are they? Because if they are the leaders, these kids have really lost their leaders in many ways and I'm not sure that we are getting the leadership that we need from the adult world - on a family level, on a political level, on an intellectual level. I mean all these various things I think are somehow they get into the minds of these kids. Kids know.

They can sense if they want to get into college they can just because they have enough money to get into college and that it doesn't take any degree of academic excellence. And indeed, academic excellence in public schools - I can speak for but not in private - that academic excellence is so relative now. You know we have taken away the absolute standards of excellence and we have just basically scaled everything we do here in terms of, you know, taking the so-called raw scores and turning them into passing grades. Honor societies aren't even honor societies any more if you check into them very carefully. They are just not societies with standards. Kids know that they can get so many A's, so many B's, so many C's, have a good leadership record and so on, and take average to low-below average courses, and get A's and B's in those and still be on the honor society.

I think kids are sensing that the world in general has these kinds of oscillating, or else non-existent standards. And I think that they sense that. I think that what I am trying to describe here is a kind of, you know, instead of saying that it is just you are dealing with just a question of shame - I think we are talking about all these contributing forces that really somehow (get) beat into them. That's why I say this is a huge problem.

Interviewer: Could you explain what scaling is?

HSET: Scaling would be like if a kid got a 54 on a test in a class of 20 students and the highest grade on that test was a 74, then the 74 becomes an "A" and the 54 becomes a "C".

Interviewer: Oh, I see. Where the 74 should have been a "C" .

HSET: Yeah. So we are sort of feeding the curve here. You know you have to have so many A's, B's and C's and all that sort of stuff. But even then, it is a different kind of thing. It's not only that we are feeding the curve but it's like we are almost devising a curve of our own here and again, it is lowering the standards.

Interviewer: Could you tell me more about your comment about a lack of purpose in kids today?

HSET: I think it's also in society today. There is a sense, in terms of purpose, I think the kids that I teach anyway, they sense that in order to really get along and be happy in today's world, that they would have to reach heights that are impossible for them to attain. I mean, you know, it's the lottery mentality you know. Either you've got a lot of money or you don't have enough and I think that some of these kids are sensing that they can't get a lot of money, so there's a certain kind of resignation that they operate under. Like okay, I'll work for what I can get but I know I can't get everything I want. There's nothing there for them. What I am suggesting is that for many kids they don't see striving towards something and for something as a real thing today because they know that, or they sense that at least, that in order for them to get all of what they want out of life they would have to be like (Michael) Jordan, making millions like some of these actors and musicians with tons of bucks.

Interviewer: Do you perceive it like a combination of skepticism and defeatism?

HSET: I think so. They are skeptical about the standards. Yes, I think they are skeptical.

Interviewer: And the models?

HSET: And the defeatism in relation, yeah, I absolutely agree with that. And I also think that the institutions of education themselves are not sure of what they want from kids any more. I think that all our standards in education, I think there are people who are debating it out there. There are so many damn debates on what education is and what do we want our kids to get from it, and what do we want them leaning toward. I think generally speaking that the institution of education right now are simply unclear about what our mission is - if indeed we have a mission. And I think that there is again, there is that relativism that has crept in, you know, and I think that a certain amount of relativism is important but I think that there have to be stopping points. There have to be points where you say "yeah, that's acceptable", but as far as this, as opposed to this kind of thing that keeps rotating and rotating, there is no getting off point. Do you know what I mean?

Interviewer: I think so, yeah.

HSET: So, what I am sensing here, like at (XXX) High School, we are just going along blindly what we do. We don't have any leadership basically. This is where I want to be careful, but I think school committees in general over the years I have taught, these are not educators, they are not people who are in touch with education. These are people who have been educated through public schools, alot of them, whose kids are in school, but they don't know very much about education in the conceptual sense of education. They haven't been around education. They haven't studied. They don't know what the research is. These people are not paid or paid pennies and they are there. Some of them are there because they are really conscientious members of the community and some of them are there for the prestige that it brings them, but they are not really there as knowledgeable people in the field of education. Therefore, they are not leading us.

I don't have to talk about the Federal government. Are we going to have a Department of Education or are we not going to have a Department of Education? What does it stand for? You bring in a conservative administration, they'll end up abolishing education - that is the Department of Education. Then you bring in other groups and they want to take something

which has had a long history or whatever they want to dispense with it and start something else. We have got more debate going on in the field of education, yet we haven't asked the question: "What do we want our kids to get out of education?" and "Why do we want them to get it?". And I think kids sense that kind of equivocation.

Interviewer: Uh huh. What kinds of changes have occurred in approaches to discipline here at the school?

HSET: Well, I would have to say that over the years that I have been here, there have been gray areas, grayer areas of approaches to discipline. We still use the old detention system and its, I mean, you can't say it works. You can say it serves as a kind of a threat, like who does it threaten? Well it doesn't threaten the chronically undisciplined kids, if I can use that term. Those kids don't care how many detentions they accumulate. In the 33 years that I have been here, that has never changed. You still get your steady list of kids. They will be in there 3-5 times a week or maybe twice a week. The kids that really benefit from the detention program are the ones that are never there because they always feel like there is where I think shame is still alive. Level I kids still feel, generally speaking, in our school, Level I students, the honor students, feel a sense of public shame. It's almost as if they are on display if they were to appear in detention. I tell you it will drive some kids to tears and they do everything they can to avoid it and sometimes they fall into it, but it is rare, they fall into it unwillingly. And when they do, it is like the ultimate humiliation. There is that sense there, but I do have to say that has always been the case. Level I kids, honor kids in the schools, probably nationwide, just don't want to be identified as detention type of people.

We have got internal suspension and external suspension. Expulsion is almost illegal. I mean we almost can never use it, it is rare. Basically that's where we pull back I think. When we use to suspend kids, externally, it was for longer periods and then there would be more expulsions, but I think we have pulled back. A lot of that has to do with litigation. You know, the legal profession has gotten into this thing and I think that, you know Boards of Education at the state level have sent dictums to the areas advising them

that if a kid is blah, blah, blah, blah, blah, he/she still has to be educated and so on. I mean the State Department has muddied up the waters in a lot of things in education and I think discipline is one of them.

Interviewer: How important is it if the kids know that being expelled is virtually impossible?

HSET: You have to understand that for some kids that school is a social world for them. This is where they come to be with other children. It is a primal instinct to want to be with the herd and when kids are going to be suspended for two days, and that's the ruling of this place generally, most kids are suspended for two days because it has to be terrible for them to be suspended for more than two days. Two days is okay with them. That's almost a little status thing you know. I'm out for two days, I don't have to go to school for two days and all that. It strikes me that they would be terribly uncomfortable if it was for like 5 days or 10 days they were suspended. My sense is that it would probably be more of a deterrent if it were that long because these kids know what to do with themselves for two days, but for 5-10 days they would have a lot of trouble. So, I think that it would definitely have some affect. I can't be sure, but that would be my sense anyway.

Interviewer: What's the view of the faculty toward detentions?

HSET: We have a faculty now as opposed to many years ago that's pretty relative. I mean many years ago, the faculty found detentions to be generally an acceptable part of what school is about. Now we have many faculty members who agree with detention and (those) who disagree with detention. Who agree with suspension and who disagree with suspension. I mean that you are finding amongst your faculty, you know, this kind of diversity of opinion. I think that that is okay but diversity of opinion generates into the community itself, in the school community itself, and I think that people get a sense here that discipline is on unsteady ground. That we are not actually sure what to do with it.

Teachers do get up in arms when the administration tends to side with the students in various ways. Whether there is a verbal or physical confrontation with a student and a teacher, the administration, in the opinion of many teachers, goes too far out of its way to satisfy the students in that kind of situation. Feeling it would be safer for them to satisfy the students instead of to satisfy the teachers. So, I am afraid to say that that puts out a pretty awful message to kids which is basically means we can run this institution ultimately. Right? So I see that as another problem.

Interviewer: When you say there is a relativism among the faculty on detentions, do the students get the idea that in your class for a certain act they might get a detention, where in Mrs. Brown's class they wouldn't?

HSET: You got it. Teachers know that in some cases, I include myself in this, I am not of the same mind of other teachers in this school regarding the same issues. If I see two people in the hall making out, you know, kissing or petting, I mean I feel embarrassed to go up there and say cut it out. And I am not only feeling embarrassed, but I feel threatened because with kids today and you interfere in that kind of intimacy that goes on, even though they are doing it in the wrong place and at the wrong time, they will snap at you. There are very angry. They will humiliate you if they can. They will do whatever they can to strike back. It isn't like it use to be many years ago when you could say something to a student and somehow he would feel a certain amount of, you know, presence there on (a teacher's) part. Today, students do not find it an issue to curse teachers. I will give you one case in point. One of our new teachers who came to our school, this was this year, caught a student cheating and she had all the goods on him, it was just so blatant, it was just so visible, and of course a lot of denial set in on the part of the kid, so the teacher called the Vice Principal and said we are coming down there because I need some action on this and I can't get this kid to either admit or comply in some way and I am even trying to offer him ways to deal with this thing and he just won't do anything with it. The Vice Principal said come on down and as the new teacher was taking this boy down to the V.P.'s office, the boy was walking either in front of her or behind her, (he) said to other students who would be

standing in the hall at the time, "If you see this bitch on Main Street, shoot her, shoot the fucker." And, he said that a couple of times as he was walking down the halls. You could talk to her if you need further information, or I could get it for you.

Interviewer: On the way to the office?

HSET: Yes, this was on the way to the Vice Principal's office that this happened. Now, admittedly this may sound like an outstanding, remarkable case, and I would say that I've never heard of that before, but it was verified. It did happen. The heavy "f" and that kind of an abandon, that kind of threat to the teacher, is not unusual these days. Therefore, teachers tend to back off.

Interviewer: And you?

HSET: I'd back off to some degree. Partly because I feel, I'm not going to be dishonest here, that I feel a threat of these kids. I'm not afraid of them, it's just that I have reached the point in my career where I am not sure of whether I want to sacrifice my own safety sometimes just because I catch a kid smoking in the bathroom. And I get this awful sense that if I catch a kid smoking in the bathroom, I know this is sounding really contradictory and it probably is, but if I catch a kid smoking in the bathroom and I go through all the hassle that encompasses and leads to places that I don't even want to go to either, and then I find that, and I have found it with my colleagues over the years, I'm better off to find ways to get out of it and avoid it. You know, I take some of the punishment here. I mean my (past) efforts feel so feeble. You know when I am doing it against so many people. But, I am not trying to get myself out of this thing. I am as guilty as the next person when it comes to that kind of asserting myself in matters of discipline around the school.

Interviewer: But as you commented to me earlier, it sounds as though if you were to assert yourself, many times you might not be backed up by the administration. I mean it sounds likes this child who was swearing at the teacher and cheating - what were the consequences?

HSET: I believe he got two days suspension. A lot of teachers were angry about that. I mean we thought he deserved a harsher punishment than that. We feel that this kind of language is freely used and not only in this school but I am sure in a lot of other schools. Although we remind kids, people like myself, kids use the words "pissed-off" on their papers and I will underscore it and say that this is inappropriate language. I hear kids conversing, let's say during class, I tell them that is perfectly all right for them to talk but I don't want to hear any type of that language in the classroom. But there is that - and I have had bad experiences with Vice Principals - where I have gone the extra mile and come out on the wrong end of the deal. And when you get burned enough times on something like that, and after a while you just say no.

I think that alot of us when it comes to discipline in the school, I think we are all feeling a sense of futility but I do have to say I think that futility we are sensing in the schools is the same type of futility we are sensing out of the schools - in society in general. This lack of control that the adult population has on the younger population. I mean once again it comes down to the old concept of whether the schools can do the job that the society really needs to do on its own. The schools are supposed to be institutions for fundamental learning but we have had to take on so many jobs, replacing the parent, you know, in so many ways, that I am sensing that the administration keeps sort of hoisting on us this psychological, sociological kind of approach to teaching and you have to consider the whole kid and they give us all this kind of stuff to think about. We have got 22 kids and sometimes they would have us teach all 22 kids individually so we would have to go in there with 22 individual lesson plans - totally oblivious to what it means to prepare for a class. It is difficult to prepare for one class let alone 22 individuals in that class. The administration has bought that I think, but the teachers have not bought it. The teachers want to go straight ahead and they want to teach and they want to meet problems as they confront them, but we don't want to deal with kids as if we knew what was going on in their lives every single minute of every single day of their life here at the school. We just can't. It's crazy, you would get anything done.

Interviewer: Yeah. Do you have to second guess what impact criticism would have on their self-esteem too?

HSET: Yeah, it's always going on. Self-esteem is bug-a-boo at high school level, I mean it is very difficult. Life is unfair. You know the things we learn we learn too late, number one, and most of the things we learn, what I mean by too late is that I am suggesting is that it is almost impossible to change ourselves but we can modify how we can do things. But at this level here, we can't really do a hell of a lot for self-esteem. It has already been so ingrained in them. You know the self-esteem buzz word around here strikes me as kind of hollow.

Interviewer: Do you hear it alot?

HSET: Not a lot any more.

Interviewer: No?

HSET: Which is good. Teachers have stopped using it because we just don't take that stuff seriously any more. We believe that we need to dignify kids but we don't think that we need to try to improve their self-esteem as if it were something, as if it was something measurable in that we could move it from this level up to that level.

Interviewer: What changes have you seen in educational approaches?

HSET: Well, it has changed. It's trying to change. I mean that when I first came into teaching I think the general mission was to make children literate, make children moral, make them aesthetically conscious, make them love learning for the sake of learning, learn for the sake of learning. I think that all those things were going on. I think our mission statement now excludes some of that stuff but I think other forces in this country of ours are trying to move it in the direction of pragmatism. I think the mission now seems to be career

pathways and the school to work. What I think they are asking high schools to do is the impossible, (to be) comprehensive high schools. They are asking us to operate almost as these kinds of vocational schools or something you know.

We are not here to prepare kids for vocations, we are here to prepare them for life. Life is more than vocations. I think that alot of us will agree with that. So, I think that we are band wagoning them, not surprisingly, but I am not sure about all that. I'm just speculating.

Incidentally that whole mission statement thing is very interesting because that is a term adopted once again from the business community. Boy, that tells you something! Business puts out mission statements you know. If I can just be liberal here with language a little bit, but I think that it is so much bullshit you know to take that thing called a mission statement and apply it to you know this world of human beings with so many factors to be concerned with . You know its an encroachment, is what it is. The business community has been doing its level best in this state especially, and maybe in other states too, but this state especially it is done. Infringing upon the very sacred world of education.

They want us to operate, if they could, if we could, like a business. They want us to basically prepare students for the working world. They are vague as to what the working world is you know? We don't work with factories any more. How do you want us to prepare them? If you want us to prepare them for the working world, then you better change what we have got here in terms of the architecture, changing the curriculum, changing a lot of ways. You can't do it with what we've got now. We don't even want to do it. We still see the system as the best system of all to prepare the kids in a lot of different ways.

So, the mission statements generally, and there has been one major shift and the on major shift that I have detected is the move from the development of the whole person to the development of just part of that person that is going into the job market. They want high schools to do that now.

Before they were asking colleges to do that. It seems to me that there has been a great emphasis on math and science. I mean that's the kind of indication. Remember when Ronald Reagan came out with the "Nation at Risk"? I don't know if you remember that. He issued a report "The Nation at Risk." You should read it, you would be astounded. It was so politicized.

Basically he was saying, it wasn't really that the nation that was at risk, but it was, it was a report about education. The reason why he entitled it "The Nation at Risk", or they did, is because the thing we were risking was our national security. So what they envisioned, ultimately, if you read the document, is that education is here to serve national security in times of war. That we weren't doing well with weapons and that we weren't doing well with rockets and so on and so on. So there was this big move toward Math and Science as was there was in the days of Sputnik. You might remember in '57, that was kind of a renewal of the effort.

Interviewer: Even Clinton is making noise about Math and Science as well.

HSET: That's right.

Interviewer: And art was seen as kind of a fluff course and Music.

HSET: That's funny you should say that because maybe that really does in some ways - again - (function) as kind of these hidden messages these kids are picking up all over the place. We don't value the arts. The arts are in shambles in public education. They are in shambles. Check our music program, check our art program for example in our school system alone. It is tokenism. Pure tokenism, if anything. So if you think about what the arts are, art is statements about humanity. Art ultimately tries to assert, even if it is in no uncertain terms, a certain morality, a certain basis for our being in eternity. I mean it if you want to put it that way. It enternalizes us in some way. It says that there is more to life. There are bigger things and bigger issues in life. And we have taken the one thing that I think a lot of kids could be drawn to in the world of art, in the world of music, and basically we have suppressed them.

So fundamentally what we have done today, and maybe we have been doing this since '57, we have been shifting more toward the what I would call the amoral discipline of education - science and math. These things don't deal with morals. That's not their concern. I mean questions of ethics.

Oh, incidentally, the move toward business too. You can see a clear move in that direction. You look around the schools and you will see more computer rooms - IBM's competing with Macintoshes and so on. You can see that the curriculum has broadened in the business areas. There's Accounting I, II, and III. I can remember when I first got here there wasn't any accounting or maybe Accounting I. And (now) they have all these office courses. Don't get me wrong, I have nothing against that, but what I am saying is that that seems to be the proclivity - the direction as opposed to the arts.

Interviewer: You make a good point. When Accounting II and III came in did other art courses go out or has it always been just Art I?

HSET: I am not saying that we should forsake one for the other, but what I am saying is that you know we need to have a broader curriculum in that way. We need to hire a couple of more personnel to help move that music and art curriculum in our particular school. And bring in other forms such as dance. Require the student body to take those courses, not just electives. You can do some checking on that yourself and you will see that it is not a question of we need more in business but we do need more in the arts, definitely.

Whoever adopted, and I forgot who it was, if it was the guy from Brown University, the big educationalist down there, I can't even think of his name right now. If he was the one who called Music and Art the frills, but he was right. Whoever said it, they used the word "frill". They were exactly right. That is still what it is right now. Drama - we have been trying to get drama going in the school. There is no one who is going to get behind drama in this school. No one. I have been trying to get writing across the curriculum to be become a big part of this education unit. I can't get an administrator who will support it. Just so that writing can become a creative thing - writing is being creative.

Interviewer: Have the students attitudes and behavior seem to have changed over the course of your tenure here?

HSET: I would have to say that attitudes have changed. Generally there is more abandoned in their attitudes genuinely. I remember when I first came here you would never hear of a young woman using the heavy "f" word, at least publicly, you just wouldn't hear it. Now, it is so common. You would never hear anyone burping in the halls, or if you did it was some weirdo. Now, burping in the hall is pretty much an acceptable form of behavior. I'm not saying it goes on all the time, I'm just saying that they think that it is perfectly okay to do this and it's not a big issue. Even girls burp and that's okay. I know that it sounds pretty sexist, but there was once when there was a kind of genteelism here, you know, and maybe some people might frown on that. I'm not sure if there wasn't some value in it.

There is more gross indifference to the education process itself. too. There is more of an attitude from the students "Did I pass? did I get a D? I hear from a lot of kids today - did I get the D? The sense of academic achievement is not there. It is just not a big deal. They know they can get into the Community College and they know they can get into some other college and still be able to get some sort of a passing grade from me or some of the other teachers. Again, did I get a D because they didn't want to get the F. Did I get the "D" as opposed to the "F". They are alot more casual, I should say careless, not alot more, but they are careless, in the way they dress. I'm not saying that dress codes, ah, I am saying, I mean dressing up isn't what it used to be. "Dressing up" just isn't what it used to be. The only way they do is if they are forced to.

There is more liberal attitude towards drugs and alcohol in this school. There is that simmering anger I was talking to you about before that is always there and you have to be very careful how you talk to kids these days - very careful. They are just ready to just pounce on you verbally and some of them physically. Although most kids are pretty careful about assaulting teachers. Most of the kids who maintain pretty good standards in this school are the upper level kids. I will tell you again, honor kids. That is very interesting and if you do a profile on some of these honor kids you will find out that their families are generally pretty stable. You probably know this as a counselor. The families have standards you know what I mean and they are moving the kids

in that direction. The mothers and fathers have kept together, they devoted their lives to their kids and it is paying off.

There is less of an emphasis on doing homework. That's another big change in attitude or aspiration of value. Homework just doesn't seem to be what it used to be. More and more kids, even Level I kids are saying that weekends are my own and prior to that teachers were of the mind, several years ago, weekends were the time teachers gave the kids more homework. For kids, they would be able to do it and it was a time they could get caught up on the behind work. That seemed to be logical and it seemed to work. Now, we got them saying "We aren't going to do the homework if it comes up on Friday night". So what teachers have done, generally speaking, is to give weekend assignments and have them due on Tuesdays instead of on Monday. So that way it gives them the option to do it over the weekend, or if they want, they can do it on Monday when they are back to what they call school which to them is "Look, I work here five days a week, that's my job, now it is over"

And you know the other thing is that so many kids in our school have jobs now. They have jobs after school and, you know, some of these jobs start at 3:00 o'clock, which I think is a crying shame, and end at 9:00 o'clock at night - sometimes even 10:00 o'clock.

I notice more and more kids are getting their own apartments - not a lot more. When I first came here, for a kid living in an apartment it was almost like someone getting a divorce in the 1920's. Now it's not uncommon living in an apartment for a kid on his own and holding a job to pay for the apartment. I wouldn't say it's the rule but more kids are there.

Interviewer: Could you give me a rough percentage?

HSET: I am going to say there are - I'll just take my own percentage - I am going to say between 5 and 10%, which I think is pretty high.

Interviewer: That's a lot of kids.

HSET: Yeah, that's a lot of kids, but you can check that with the office and get more valid information on that and I would if I was doing this report.

Interviewer: How has parenting changed over your thirty plus years?

HSET: I mean I think that the modeling and the involvement is absent in general. I could tell you many instances. The other day the Vice Principal was called up to a classroom to smell one of the female students because the teacher detected the smell of marijuana and, indeed, the Vice Principal came up and she could smell the same thing. She brought the kid down and went through her inquiries. I guess the Vice Principal was well within her rights to do this. And then the next thing I knew, the mother was in the school, this was the next day when the mother was in the school because the daughter was really belligerent about this whole thing and the mother came into the school to try to, I think, prevent her daughter from getting suspended or whatever. The mother sat down and the mother looked as untamed as the daughter. She looked physically untamed - over made-up - trying to make herself look young and everything. At any rate, the Vice Principal spoke to her and she said this is what she did and this is what we found. The mother got belligerent and said: "Do you know what has been going on in our house lately?" What kind of an insane question is that. How the hell does she (the VP) know what has been going on in (their) house lately? "Do you know the stress she has been under?" I mean this is not leadership, this is not modeling, I don't think. Right?

The kid showed no respect for the mother. She walked out on the mother and the mother was saying "Come on!" and the girl just kept walking away from her mother. It wasn't like the mother got any great respect from her either. You know, you must see these things yourself going on all the time. It's just no big deal.

Interviewer: That's a good example though.

HSET: Well, here is what I see is a primary source (of the problem) for most kids. Modeling is either non-existent or negative. We are talking two-thirds of the population in this school. I would say that modeling is non-existent or negative. Now you take two-thirds of those kids and take it down to about 30 - 40 %, but I am very certain about the 30% figure, they just don't have it.

Parents are either single and overwhelmed with their children or there is just too much work and responsibility for them to supervise their kids. They don't know how to set standards. Jay, I have said this time and time again, parents today more than ever need to get, and I don't know at what level of intervention this ought to set in, but they need to be educated. The parents need to be educated about what (they need to) know about today's young people, what to know about the climate out there and how to deal with it. You wonder what kind of parents these kids are going to make.

Interviewer: Well that's the big worry.

HSET: Some of these kids might do what I did which I considered I didn't have a very good father or a model, and I decided you know that my life was not going to be like his, and I haven't been like him. Very thankfully I haven't been like him. Some kids just might go that route and say when I have kids I am going to do it right. But I think, by and large, that's going to be the exception and not the rule. You know my sense, my sense is that a lot of these kids are going to go off and get married and repeat the cycle. It is just going to keep going. They are going to have kids and they are not going to be good parents for their own kids.

I hope that I am totally wrong about that and I know this sounds like you know that I mean I feel like I am off base when I say things like that, but it is just a sense I get.

Interviewer: Finally, let's say it seems intuitively correct that a sense of shame would prohibit some of these certain behaviors from ever occurring. Do you think that this sensitivity is less of an internal issue for children today?

HSET: Yeah, I do. I think that it is less of an issue today. But, it's primarily because of the lack of training in that area (for) their parents. They just haven't had the training and from the teachers of this school, and from adults in general.

In short I think what we have done, as a society, and maybe this is a Western civilization feature, I don't know, but I really do think that we have as

adults - we really deserted our kids. I think we have deserted our kids. And here we are, you know, trying to find ways to bring them around. That's what your whole experiment or inquiry is all about. To find ways to bring them around, but we all know what we have to do. We all sense what we have to do as adults (is that) it has to be a concerted effort and (on) many fronts. I am not sure, Jay, I'm just not sure. The fact that people like you are looking into this thing I think is hopeful - a sign of hope. I really mean that. It certainly is worrisome.

Interviewer: What's happened to this higher purpose? I mean did that - do you think that alot of students of yours are evaluating their life, or will evaluate their life, in monetary terms as in physical acquisitions?

HSET: I think.

Interviewer: More so now than when you were teaching 10 years ago?

HSET: Maybe not 10 years ago, but when I first started. I started at a pretty tough time. I started right at the beginning of the Vietnam War. We were just getting into the Vietnam War and the whole 60's revolution was about to break wide open. Yeah, I just think it's "Get what you can while you can", and in the best way you can and in the quickest way you can.

You know it is just like all the writers and artists have been trying to tell us, the 20th century writers have been trying to tell us. The spiritual world is really fading. It's fading. And what you do, you know what it causes. Joseph Conrad, <u>This Side of Darkness</u>, answers a lot of those questions. With his famous hollow at the core. The search for power and the search for position, a lack of conviction, people who have conviction but do not act on those convictions, or people who are staying clear away from convictions because they know what a conviction could mean. It could mean commitment in some way for them - moral commitment, other kinds of commitments. And I really think that that has been just generating and generating and then we go through a couple of wars and I am sure from there you know a certain kind of

what I call a survival sort of mentality set in.

Over this century - it has been a tough century. It has just been a very, very tough century. And, you and I are products of it. The psychological age has really come upon us now and it is very interesting the new spiritual gurus are the psychologists and psychiatrists. You know what I am saying - that they have become now the people that we look to, and, Jay, it is funny when you look into the lives of these people who are leading us in the psychiatric area, the psychological area. Many times their lives are in disarray too. They don't practice what they preach either. They will tell you how to raise your children, but not in their house. It is unbelievable. God, it is like, What the hell? A marriage counselor who has been divorced twice. What the hell does that tell you? She has been there! Oh good.

But do you see what we do? We have become such great manipulators today we can justify almost everything. We can take someone who is guilty and we can make that person innocent. We can take ourselves who are guilty and make ourselves innocent. There are so many vast definitions in language now in that respect. We sort of bought into that. Someone once said that the reason why language was "invented" so that we could protect the truth from getting out.

Interviewer: That's interesting because if you do see alot of excuses, and alot of skepticism, and not a commitment then there's little or no room for shame. I mean shame in the sense having these aspirations and falling short and feeling responsible.

HSET: Well, that's the key, feeling responsible. I think that is where the shame really comes in. You know you had something and now you let it go and now you have to sort of feel the impact of that.

And you have to feel it in a community sense. As I sit here and say that, you know, this nagging thing hits me about "Who cares about the community, who cares about what anybody thinks"? But when you think about it we have to be concerned about the community because the community is what protects us ultimately. As much as it condemns us, it protects us too. We have to protect the community. That's what we are

talking about here, this whole thing ultimately. We're not just talking about kids that don't feel shame, we're talking about the whole structure of the society, where it is going.

The kids seem to want all the rights but none of the responsibilities. It goes back to 1968 at the Chicago Convention, you know, as long as we are protesting and so on and so forth, they couldn't understand it when they were getting beat over the head with the clubs. They didn't understand that in reality, you know, if you do this, and you break laws, then you get beat, you get clubbed. It is all part of it. But I think you are right, I don't know what we have done. Maybe society has developed more institutions to protect people from feeling their responsibility.

I am very much in favor of welfare. I think that people who need welfare ought to get welfare. But when it becomes a cushion, a generational lifestyle, then I think we have got to take a closer look at what the hell we are talking about here. Because what we are probably doing there is taking the individual away from his responsibility, her responsibility, and encouraging this kind of non-personhood. Which is okay by some people - live and die. Yeah. That's just the way they look at life. This is good.

Okay, I am sure that most of what I have said is superficial but I'll be interested to see if it will be confirmed in some of the other stuff that you find there.

Interviewer: Oh no. Thanks very much. You had great ideas. Any last thoughts?

HSET: You know for education it is clear in my mind what we need to do. We need to involve parents. We need to bring them into the schools literally, into the schools. We need to educate the parents. We need to provide places for their education, time for their education. We need to bring the employers into our schools so that they can see what kids are giving up in order to get. We need to have more facilities and more teachers into the profession so that we can get the arts in there. You know, make them a very visible part of what we do. We don't need all these damn charter schools and all these other schools that are sort of splintering you know, because that's not going to solve our

problems I think either. I think that most kids are going to come to your public schools.

I really think that those are the kinds of things that are going to have to happen and I am going to tell you that politicians are going to have to stop bull-shitting the public. They are going to start having to tell the public the way it is and that if you want to have good healthy kids, and you want a good educational system, you, Mr. & Mrs. Parent, you are responsible for it. Not with your taxes and not with your complaints, but with the way you bring up your kid. That's it basically.

Interviewer: Thanks again, thanks very much.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Ackrill, J. L., (1987) *A New Aristotle Reader,* Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press.

Anderson, Digby, Ed. (1992) *The Loss of Virtue: Moral Confusion and Social Disorder in Britain and America,* New York: National Review Books.

_____, Ed. (1995) *This Will Hurt: The Restoration of Virtue and Civic Order,* New York: National Review Books.

Aquinas, St. Thomas, (1964) *Commentary on the Nicomachean Ethics,* Volumes 1 and 2, Trans., C. I. Litzinger, O. P., Chicago: Henry Regnery Company

Aristotle, (1953) *The Nicomachean Ethics,* Trans., J. A. K. Thompson, Cambridge, England: Oxford University Press.

_____ , (1941) *The Basic Works of Aristotle,* Ed. Richard McKeon, New York: Random House.

Beach, Waldo (1992) *Ethical Education in American Public Schools,* Washington, D. C.: National Education Association

Bennett, William (1993) *The Book of Virtues,* New York: Simon and Schuster

_____ (1994) *The Index of Leading Cultural Indicators,* New York: Simon and Schuster.

Benninga, Jacques S. (Editor) (1991) *Moral, Character, and Civic Education in the Elementary School* , New York: Columbia University, Teachers College Press.

Borysenko, Joan (1990) *Guilt is the Teacher, Love is the Lesson,* New York: Warner Books.

Bradshaw, John (1988) *Healing the Shame That Binds You,* Deerfield Beach, Florida. Health Communications, Inc.

Branden, Nathaniel (1994) *The Six Pillars of Self-Esteem,* New York. Bantam Books.

Braun, J. Jay and Linder, Darwyn (1975) *Psychology Today: An Introduction* New York: Random House.

Brooks, B. D, & Goble, F. (1997) *The Case for Character Education: The Role of the School in Teaching Values and Virtue,* Northridge, CA.: Studio 4 Productions

Carr, David. (1991) *Educating the Virtues: An essay on the philosophical psychology of moral development and education.* London and New York. Routledge Press.

Chisholm, Roderick (1986) *Brentano and Intrinsic Value,* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Coles, Robert. (1997) *The Moral Intelligence of Children,* New York: Random House

Coopersmith, Stanley. (1967) *The Antecedents of Self-Esteem,* San Francisco: W. H. Freeman and Company.

Damasio, Antonio. (1994) *Descartes Error: Emotion, Reason and the Human Brain.* New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons Publisher.

Damon, William (1988) *The Moral Child: Nurturing Children's Natural Moral Growth,* New York: The Free Press, Collier Macmillan Publishers.

Descartes. (1985) *The Philosophical Writings of Descartes,* Trans. Cottingham, Stoothoff, and Murdoch. Volumes I and II. Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press.

Dewey, John. (1953) *Moral Principles in Education,* New York: Philosophical Library.

Dyer, Wayne (1976) *Your Erroneous Zones,* New York, Funk and Wagnalis.

Ellis, Albert and Harper, Robert. (1975) *A New Guide to Rational Living.* North Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co.

Erikson, Erik (1950) *Childhood and Society,* New York: W. W. Norton & Co.

Feldman, Fred. (1978) *Introductory Ethics,* Englewood, N.J: Prentice-Hall.

_____ . (1986) *Doing The Best We Can,* Dordrecht: D. Reidel Publishing Company.

_____ . (1992) *Confrontations with the Reaper: A Philosophical Study of the Nature and Value of Death,* New York: Oxford University Press.

_____ . (1997) *Utilitarianism, Hedonism, and Desert* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Frazier, Robert Lewis, (1990) *Right-Making Characteristics and Morally Right Acts,* University of Massachusetts, unpublished dissertation.

Ginsburg, H. and Opper, S. (1988) *Piaget's Theory of Intellectual Development,* Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice Hall

Goldman, Daniel. (1995) *Emotional Intelligence,* New York: Bantam Books.

Hennessy, Thomas C., S.J. (1979) *Value / Moral Education: Schools and Teachers,* New York: Paulist Press.

Hersh, R., Paolitto, D., & Reimer, J. (1982) *Promoting Moral Growth: From Piaget to Kohlberg,* New York, NY: Longman Press

Hill, Paul (et. al.) (1990) *High Schools with Character,* Santa Monica, CA.: Rand Corporation.

Kant (1987) (Trans. by T. K. Abbott) *Fundamental Principles of the Metaphysic of Morals,* Buffalo, New York. Prometheus Books

Kekes, John. (1990) *Facing Evil,* Princeton, NJ.: Princeton University Press.

_____. (1993) *The Morality of Pluralism,* Princeton, N. J.: Princeton University Press.

Kilpatrick, W. (1985) *The Emperor's New Clothes: The Naked Truth about the New Psychology,* Westchester, Ill.: Crossway Books

_____. (1992) *Why Johnny Can't Tell Right from Wrong,* New York: Touchstone Books.

Kohlberg, L. (1981) *The Philosophy of Moral Development: Moral Stages and the Idea of Justice,* New York: Harper and Row.

_____. (1981) Essays on Moral Development; Vol 1, New York: Harper and Row.

_____. (1984) *The Psychology of Moral Development: The Nature and Validity of Moral Stages* New York: Harper and Row.

Kraut, Richard. (1989) *Aristotle on the Human Good,* Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press.

Kupperman, Joel (1991) *Character,* Oxford: Oxford University Press

Lewis, M. and Haviland, J. (1993) *Handbook of Emotions,* New York, N. Y.: The Guilford Press

Lickona, T. (Ed.) (1976) *Moral Development and Behavior: Theory, Research, and Social Issues,* New York, NY: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston Press.

Lickona, T. (1991) *Educating for Character: How Our Schools Can Teach Respect and Responsibility.* New York: Bantam Books.

Lynd, Helen Merrell (1958) *On Shame and the Search for Identity,* New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc.

Matthews, Gareth (1980) *Philosophy and the Young Child,* Cambridge, MA.: Harvard University Press.

_____ (1984) *Dialogues with Children,* Cambridge, MA.: Harvard University Press.

_____ (1992) *Thought's Ego in Augustine and Descartes,* Ithaca: Cornell University Press.

_____ (1994) *The Philosophy of Childhood,* Cambridge, MA.: Harvard University Press.

McKay, Matthew and Fanning, Patrick. (1987) *Self-Esteem.* Oakland, CA.: New Harbinger Publications.

Mill, John Stuart (1989) "Utilitarianism" Ed. By Louis Pojman. *Ethical Theory: Classical and Contemporary Readings,* Belmont. CA.: Wadsworth Publishing Company.

Moore, G. E. (1988) *Principia Ethica,* Buffalo, N. Y.: Prometheus Books.

Nietzsche. (1976). *The Portable Nietzsche,* Trans. Walter Kaufman. New York: Penguin Books.

Oakley, Justin (1992) *Morality and the Emotions,* London and New York: Routledge Press.

Plato (1961) *The Collected Dialogues of Plato,* Ed. E. Hamilton. Princeton, New Jersey: Bollingen Fountain, Princeton, New Jersey.

Phelan, Thomas (1996) *Self-Esteem Revolutions in Children,* Glen Ellyn, Ill.: Child Management Press, Inc.

Piaget, J. (1965) *The Moral Judgment of the Child,* New York: The Free Press.

Purpel, D. and Ryan, K., eds. (1976) *Moral Education: It Comes with the Territory,* Berkeley: McCutchan Press.

Ratzinger, Cardinal Joseph, (Ed.) (1994) *Catechism of the Catholic Church,* Mahwah, New Jersey: Paulist Press.

Rawls, John (1971) *A Theory of Justice,* Cambridge, MA.: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press.

Rogers, Carl (1965) *Client-Centered Therapy,* Boston, MA.: Houghton Miffin Company.

Rorty, Amelie Oksenberg. (1980) *Essays on Aristotle's Ethics,* Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.

_____. (1980) *Explaining Emotions,* Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.

_____. (1976) *The Identities of Persons,* Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.

Sears, Pauline and Sherman, Vivian. (1964) *In Pursuit of Self-Esteem* Belmont, CA.: Wadsworth Publishing Company.

Seidman, I. E., (1991) *Interviewing as Qualitative Research: A Guide for Researchers in Education and the Social Sciences,* New York and London. Teachers College Press

Simon, S. (1976) *Helping Your Child Learn Right From Wrong: A Guide to Values Clarification.* New York. McGraw-Hill Book Company.

_____. (1972) *Values Clarification: A Handbook of Practical Strategies for Teachers and Students.* New York: Hart Publishing Company.

_____. (1976) "Values Clarification vs. Indoctrination". *Moral Education....It Comes with the Territory,* Ed. D Purpel and K. Ryan, Chicago, Ill.: McCutchan Publishing Company.

_____. (1966)*Values and Teaching: Working with Values in the Classroom,* Columbus, Ohio, Charles E. Merrill Publishing Company.

_____. (1978)*Values and Teaching: Second Edition,* Columbus, Ohio: Charles E. Merrill Publishing Company.

Sinclair, Robert and Ghory, Ward (1987) *Reaching Marginal Students: A Primary Concern for School Renewal* , Chicago, Ill.: McCutchan Publishing Company.

Solomon, Robert C. (1977) *The Passions,* Garden City, New York: Anchor Press / Doubleday

Stocker, Michael. (1996) *Valuing Emotions* , Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Taylor, Gabriele. (1985). *Pride, Shame, and Guilt: Emotions of Self-Assessment.* Oxford. Clarendon Press.

Tyler, Ralph W. (1949) *Basic Principles of Curriculum and Instruction,* Chicago. Ill.: The University of Chicago Press.

Wadsworth, Barry (1989) *Piaget"s Theory of Cognitive and Affective Development,* New York and London: Longman Press

Williams, Bernard (1993) *Shame and Necessity,* Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.

Wilson, James Q. (1995) *On Character,* Washington, D. C.: The AEI Press.

_____. (1997). *Moral Judgment,* New York: Basic Books.

Averill, James (1980) "Emotion and Anxiety: Sociocultural, Biological, and Psychological Determinants" *Explaining Emotions*, Ed. by A. Rorty, Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.

Bailey, Charles (1981) "Kohlberg on Morality and Feelings" *Lawrence Kohlberg:Consensus and Controversy,* Ed. by Modgil, S. &Modgil, C. Philadelphia and London, The Falmer Press

Baron, Marcia (1988) "Remorse and Agent-Regret" *Midwest Studies in Philosophy,* Ed. by French, Uehling and Wettstein. Notre Dame, IN.: University of Notre Dame Press.

Benninga, J. (1991) "Moral and Character Education in the Elementary School: An Introduction" Ed. J. Benninga. *Moral, Character, and Civic Education,* New York and London: Teachers College Press.

Burnyeat, M. F. (1980) "Aristotle on Learning to be Good" *Essays on Aristotle's Ethics,* Ed. by Amelie Oksenberg Rorty. Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.

Chisholm, Roderick (1976) "Brentano's Theory of Correct and Incorrect Emotion" *The Philosophy Of Brentano,* Ed. by Linda L. McAlister. London: Gerald Duckworth and Company.

Davies, Christie (3 April 1995) "What Made Them Moral". National Review.

Deigh, J. (1995) "Shame and Self-Esteem: A Critique", *Dignity, Character and Self Respect,* Ed. by Robin Dillon, New York, N.Y.: Routledge.

Doyle, Denis (February 1997) "Education and Character: A conservative View. Phi Delta Kappan.

Eastland, Terry (12 December 1996) "Teaching Morality in the Public Schools". The Wall Street Journal.

Freeland, C. (1985) "Aristotelian Actions", *Nous* 19.

Ford, Richard (27 December 1998) "Our Moments Have All Been Seized" The New York Times.

Gardner, Howard. (February 1999) "Who Owns Intelligence", *The Atlantic Monthly.*

Goodwin, Carol (1998) "1997 Massachusetts Youth Risk Behavior Survey Results" Malden, MA.: Massachusetts Department of Education

Howard, R. (1991) "Lawrence Kohlberg's Influence on Moral Education in Elementary Schools" Ed. J. Benninga. *Moral, Character, and Civic Education ,* New York and London. Teachers College Press.

Irwin, T. H. (1980) "Reason and Responsibility in Aristotle, *Essays in Aristotle's Ethics,* Ed. by Amelie Oksenberg Rorty. Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.

Izard, Carroll. (1993) "Organizational and Motivational Functions of Discrete Emotions". *Handbook of Emotions.* Ed. M. Lewis & J. Haviland, New York and London. Guilford Press.

Jurowitz, Mark (4 March 1999) " "Humiliated' Lewinsky Breaks Silence on Ordeal", The Boston Globe.

Jurowitz, Mark (11 March 1999) "Donaldson Defiant on Lewinsky Coverage" The Boston Globe.

Kahan, Dan M. (15 January 1997) "It's a Shame We Have None". The Wall Street Journal.

Karen, Robert. (February 1992) "Shame". The Atlantic Monthly.

Kaul, Donald (15 March 1999) "Without Shame" Greenfield Recorder.

Kekes, John. (1988) "Shame and Moral Progress", *Ethical Theory: Character and Virtue,* Ed. by French, Uehling, and Wettstein, Notre Dame, IN.: University of Notre Dame Press.

Kemper, Theodore. (1993) "Sociological Models in the Explanation of Emotions". *Handbook of Emotions,* Ed. M. Lewis & J. Haviland, New York and London. Guildford Press

Kohn, Alfie (February 1997) "How Not to Teach Values: A Critical Look at Character Education". Phi Delta Kappan.

Kosman, L. A. (1980) "Being Properly Affected: Virtues and Feelings in Aristotle's Ethics" *Essays in Aristotle's Ethics,* Ed. by Amelie Oksenberg Rorty. Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press

Ladd, J. (1989) "Relativism", *Ethical Theory,* Ed. L. Pojman, Belmont CA.: Wadsworth Publishing Company.

Lasey, Thomas (April, 1997) "The Missing Ingredient in Character Education". Phi Delta Kappan.

Leo, John (April, 1990) "The trouble with self-esteem", *U.S. News & World Report.*

Lewis, Michael (1993) "Self-Conscious Emotions: Embarrassment, Pride, Shame, and Guilt" *Handbook of Emotions,* Ed. M. Lewis & J. Haviland. New York and London. Guilford Press

Lockwood, A. (1976) "A Critical View of Values Clarification", *Moral Education...It Comes with the Territory,* Ed. D. Purpel and K. Ryan, Berkeley, CA.: McCutchan Publishing Corporation.

Lynn, Nina Meyerhoff. (1987) "Perceptions of Self-Esteem Training for Elementary School-Aged Children", Unpublished Dissertation. Amherst, MA.: University Of Massachusetts.

Matthews, Gareth, B. (1988) "Concept Formation and Moral Development" Ed. James Russell. *Philosophical Perspectives on Developmental Psychology,* New York, Basil Blackwell

Moody-Adams, Michele (1990) "On the Old Saw That Character is Destiny" Ed. Flangan and Rorty. *Identity, Character, and Morality,* Cambridge, MA.: The MIT Press.

Moore, Eric F. (1998) "Desert, Virtue, and Justice" Unpublished Dissertation, University of Massachusetts.

Nagel, Thomas. (1979) "Moral Luck" *Mortal Questions,* Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.

Nilstun, Tore. (1981) "Aristotle on Freedom and Punishment" Lund,Sweden: Studentlitteratur.

Nussbaum, Martha Craven (1980) "Shame, Separateness, and Political Unity: Aristotle's Criticism of Plato" Ed. by Amelie Oksenberg Rorty. *Essays on Aristotle's Ethics ,* Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.

O'Hear, Anthony (1976) "Guilt and Shame as Moral Concepts". *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* London, England.

Robinson, Paul H. (March 1995) "Moral Credibility and Crime" *The Atlantic Monthly*

Ross, W. D. (1989) "What Makes Right Acts Right", *Ethical Theory: Classical and Contemporary Readings,* Ed. by Louis P. Pojman. Belmont, CA.: Wadsworth Publishing Company.

Scharf, Peter (1978) "Indoctrination, Values Clarification, and Developmental Moral Education as Educational Responses to Conflict and Change in Contemporary Society", *Readings in Moral Education,* ed. Peter Scharf,Minneapolis, MN.: Winston Press.

Seligman, D. (February, 1990) "Baby talk". *Fortune.*

Sharpe, Rochelle (10 May 1994) "Efforts to Promote Teaching of Values in Schools are Sparking Heated Debate Among Lawmakers". The Wall Street Journal

Shattuck, Roger. (January, 1999) "When Evil is Cool" *The Atlantic Monthly.*

Solomon, Robert C. (1980) "Emotions and Choice", *Explaining Emotions,* Ed. Amelie Rorty, Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press

Sommers, Christina. (1984) "Moral Education in America", *The American Scholar,* Summer Issue.

Staddon, John. (February 1995) "On Responsibility and Punishment", *The Atlantic Monthly.*

Stewart, John. (1976) "Problems and Contradictions of Values Clarification" *Moral Education...It Comes with the Territory,* Ed. D. Purpel and K. Ryan, Berkeley, CA: McCutchan Publishing Corporation.

Taylor, Gabriele. (1995). "Shame, Integrity, and Self-Respect", *Dignity, Character and Self-Respect,* Ed. by Robin Dillon, New York, N.Y.: Routledge.

Telfer, Elizabeth. (1995) "Self-Respect", *Dignity, Character and Self-Respect,* Ed. by Robin Dillon, New York, N.Y.: Routledge.

Urmson, J. O. (1980) "Aristotle's Doctrine of the Mean" Ed. by Amelie Oksenberg Rorty. *Essays on Aristotle's Ethics,* Berkeley, CA.: University of California Press.